



University Studies—No. 1.

HISTORY OF THE MEDIÆVAL SCHOOL OF INDIAN LOGIC

BY
MAHĀMAHOPĀDHYĀYA SATIS CHANDRA VIDYABHUSANA,
M.A., PH.D.

*Professor of Sanskrit and Pali, Presidency College, Calcutta ; Joint
Philological Secretary, Asiatic Society of Bengal ; and
Fellow of the Calcutta University.*



*Thesis approved for the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy in the
University of Calcutta,
1907.*

UNIVERSITY OF CALCUTTA
No. 194
V. Chandra
REGISTRAR'S OFFICE

Calcutta :

PUBLISHED BY THE CALCUTTA UNIVERSITY AND PRINTED
AT THE BAPTIST MISSION PRESS.

1909.



BCU 2245

Gs 3333



TO
THE HON'BLE MR. JUSTICE ASUTOSH MUKHOPADHYAYA,
SARASVATI, M.A., D.L., D.Sc., F.R.A.S., F.R.S.E.,
*Vice-Chancellor of the Calcutta University,
President of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, and Chairman of the Board
of Indigenous Sanskrit Education, Bengal,*
WHOSE LIFE IS AN UNBROKEN RECORD
OF LOFTY IDEALS
TRANSLATED INTO PRACTICE,
THIS BOOK IS DEDICATED
IN TOKEN OF PROFOUND ESTEEM
BY
HIS HUMBLE ADMIRER,
THE AUTHOR.



TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE
Preface	xiii
Introduction	xvii

BOOK I.

THE JAINA LOGIC.

CHAPTER I.—THE ERA OF TRADITION.

1. The Jinas and Mahāvira	1
2. The Svetāmbaras and Digambaras	2
3. Indrabhūti Gautama	2
4. Canonical Scriptures of the Jainas	3
5. The Dṛṣṭivāda	3
6. Logic in the Scriptures	4
7. Hetu	4
8. Four types of Inference	5
9. Bhadra-bāhu	5
10. His date	5
11. His works	6
12. His syllogism	6
13. Ten parts of the syllogism	7
14. Syādvāda	8
15. Seven categories of Syādvāda	8
16. The Tattvārthādhigama Sūtra	8
17. Umāsvāti	8
18. Pramāṇa or valid knowledge	9
19. Indirect knowledge or Parokṣa	10
20. Meanings of Pratyakṣa and Parokṣa	10
21. Naya	11
22. Naigama	11
23. Saṃgraha	11
24. Vyavahāra	11
25. Rju-sūtra	11
26. Śabda	12

CHAPTER II.—THE HISTORICAL PERIOD.

27. The written records of the Jainas	13
28. Siddhasena Divākara	13



	PAGE
29. His Sammatitarka-sūtra	14
30. He converts Vikramāditya to Jainism	14
31. His date	14
32. The Nyāyāvatāra	15
33. Pramāṇa or valid knowledge	15
34. Verbal Testimony	15
35. Inference	16
36. Inference for one's self	16
37. Inference for the sake of others	16
38. Terms of a syllogism	16
39. Importance of the minor term	17
40. Fallacy of the minor term	17
41. Vyāpti or inseparable connection	18
42. Intrinsic inseparable connection	18
43. Extrinsic inseparable connection	18
44. Superfluity of extrinsic inseparable connection	18
45. Fallacy of the middle term	18
46. Fallacy of example	19
47. Fallacies of the homogeneous example	19
48. Fallacies of the heterogeneous example	20
49. Refutation, &c.	21
50. Effect of Pramāṇa	21
51. Naya	21
52. Syādvāda śruta, etc.	22
53. Siddhasena Gaṇi	22
54. Samantabhadra	22
55. His works and date	23
56. The Āptamīmāṃsā	24
57. Non-existence, <i>abhāva</i>	24
58. Existence, <i>bhāva</i> , and <i>sapta-bhaṅgī</i>	25
59. Akalaṅka Deva	25
60. Akalaṅka and his Buddhist antagonist	26
61. Date of Akalaṅka	26
62. Vidyānanda	26
63. Vidyānanda's reference to other philosophers and his date	27
64. Māṇikya Nandi	28
65. The Parīkṣā-mukha-sūtra	28
66. Valid knowledge, Pramāṇa	29
67. Kinds of valid knowledge	29
68. Terms of a syllogism	29
69. Different phases of the reason or middle term	30
70. Perceptible reason in the affirmative form	30
71. Perceptible reason in the negative form	30
72. Imperceptible reason in the negative form	31



TABLE OF CONTENTS.

vii

	PAGE
73. Imperceptible reason in the affirmative form ..	31
73. Example	31
74. Inference	31
75. Verbal Testimony	32
76. Objects of valid knowledge	32
77. Result of valid knowledge	32
78. Various kinds of fallacies	32
79. Mānikya Nandi's references to contemporaneous systems of philosophy	33
80. His estimate of the Parīksāmukha sūtra	33
81. Prabhā Candra	33
82. Mallavādin	34
83. Dharmottara-tippanaka and Mallavādin's date	34
84. Pradyumna Sūri	35
85. His date	36
86. Abhayadeva Sūri	36
87. Laghusamantabhadra	37
88. Anantavīrya	37
89. Deva Sūri	38
90. His triumph over the Digambaras	38
91. His date	39
92. Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokālaṅkāra	39
93. Valid knowledge	40
94. Perception (Direct knowledge)	40
95. Indirect knowledge	41
96. Inference	41
97. Parts of a syllogism	42
98. Non-existence (<i>abhāva</i>)	42
99. Character of knowledge	43
100. Fallacies of Naya	43
101. <i>Ātmā</i> (soul)	43
102. Rules of debate	44
103. Hema Candra Sūri	44
104. His Pramāṇa-mīmāṃsā	45
105. His date	45
106. Candraprabha Sūri	45
107. Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti	46
108. Nemicandra Kavi	46
109. Ānanda Sūri and Amaracandra Sūri, nicknamed lion-cub and tiger-cub	47
110. Haribhadra Sūri	48
111. His life	49
112. His date	50
113. Syādvāda-ratnāvatārikā	50
114. Ratnaprabha Sūri	50



	PAGE
115. Mallisena Sūri	51
116. Rājaśekhara Sūri	51
117. Jñāna Candra	51
118. Guṇaratna	52
119. His date	52
120. His references to other philosophers	53
121. Dharmabhūṣana	54
122. His Nyāya-dīpikā	54
123. His references to other philosophers	54
124. Yaśovijaya Gaṇi	54
125. His life	55

BOOK II.

THE BUDDHIST LOGIC.

CHAPTER I.—THE OLD BUDDHIST REFERENCES TO LOGIC.

1. The Buddhas	57
2. Buddha Gautma	57
3. Tripiṭaka—Pāli Literature	57
4. Heretical Sects of the Buddhists	58
5. Tripiṭaka carried to Ceylon	58
6. Vijñāna (knowledge)	59
7. Classification of Vijñāna	59
8. Takkika	59
9. Takkika in the Brahma-jāla Sutta	59
10. Takkika in the Udāna	60
11. Logic in the Kathā-vatthupparakāra	60
12. Nyāya in the Milinda-pañha	61
13. The Method of debate	62
14. The Mahāyāna and the Hīnayāna	62
15. The Council of Kaniska	63
16. The Sanskrit Buddhist Literature	63
17. Nava Dharmas	64
18. Hetuvidyā in the Lalitavistara	64
19. Eighteen Sects of the Buddhists	65
20. Four Schools of the Buddhist Philosophy	66
21. The Vaiśbhāṣika School	66
22. The Sautrāntika School	67
23. Logic in works of the Mādhyamika and Yogācāra Schools	67
24. Ārya Nāgārjuna	68
25. The date of Nāgārjuna	69
26. Nāgārjuna's works	70



TABLE OF CONTENTS.

ix

	PAGE
27. Ārya Deva	70
28. The Yogācāra School	71
29. The Tārīka and Naiyāyika in the Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra	72
30. Maitreya	73
31. His Logic	74
32. Ārya Asaṅga	74
33. His Logic	75
34. Vasubandhu	75
35. His Logic	76

CHAPTER II.—SYSTEMATIC BUDDHIST WRITERS ON LOGIC.

36. Logic distinguished from general philosophy ..	78
37. Ācārya Dignāga—his likeness	78
38. Life of Dignāga	80
39. His Date	80
40. References to Dignāga	81
41. History of the Pramāṇa-samuccaya and reference to Īśvara-kṛpā	82
42. Xylograph of the work	84
43. Subjects of the work	85
44. Dignāga's Theory of Perception	85
45. Dignāga criticises Vātsyāyana	86
46. Dignāga's Theory of Inference	87
47. *Comparison and Verbal Testimony rejected ..	88
48. Dignāga's Nyāya-praveśa	89
49. Parts of a Syllogism	89
50. Form of a Syllogism	90
51. Thesis	90
52. Fallacies of Thesis	90
53. Three Characteristics of the Middle Term ..	91
54. Symbols of the Characteristics	91
55. Vyāpti or relative extension of the middle term and the major term	92
56. Fallacies of the Middle Term	93
57. Theory of Example	95
58. Fallacies of Homogeneous Example	96
59. Fallacies of Heterogeneous Example	97
60. Refutation and its Fallacy	98
61. Fallacies of Perception and Inference	99
62. Dignāga's Hetu-cakra	99
63. The Wheel of Reasons	100
64. Analysis of the Wheel	100
65. Pramāṇa-samuccaya-vṛtti	100
66. Another version of it	100



	PAGE
67. Pramāṇa-sāstra-praveśa	100
68. Ālambāṇa-parīkṣā	101
69. Ālambāṇa-parīkṣā-vṛtti	101
70. Trikāla-parīkṣā	101
71. Saṅkara Svāmin	101
72. Dharmapāla	102
73. His Works	102
74. Ācārya Śīlabhadra	102
75. Ācārya Dharmakīrti	103
76. Dharmakīrti and Kumārila	103
77. Dharmakīrti's Triumphs	104
78. His further triumphs	104
79. His Death	104
80. Dharmakīrti and Sroṇ-tsan-gam-po	104
81. Dharmakīrti's Date	105
82. History of the Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā	105
83. Subjects of the work	106
84. Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti	107
85. Pramāṇa-viniścaya	107
86. Nyāya-bindu	109
87. Theory of Perception	109
88. Inference for one's self	110
89. Three kinds of Middle Term	110
90. Inference for the sake of others	111
91. Thesis	112
92. Fallacies of Thesis	112
93. Fallacies of the Middle Term	112
94. Dharmakīrti criticises Dignāga	113
95. Dharmakīrti's theory of example	114
96. Fallacies of Homogeneous Example	115
97. Fallacies of Heterogeneous Example	116
98. Refutation and its semblance	116
99. Dharmakīrti the Vanquisher of Tīrthikas	116
100. Hetu-bindu vivaraṇa	117
101. Tarka-nyāya or Vāda-nyāya	117
102. Santānāntara-siddhī	117
103. Sambandha-parīkṣā	118
104. Sambandha-parīkṣā-vṛtti	118
105. Devendra bodhi	118
106. Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā	118
107. Story of composition of the work	118
108. Sākyā bodhi	119
109. Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā-ṭīkā	119
110. Vinīta Deva	119
111. Nyāya-bindu-ṭīkā	120



TABLE OF CONTENTS.

xi

	PAGE
112. Hetu-bindu-tīkā	120
113. Vāda-nyāya-vyākhyā	120
114. Sambandha-parīkṣā-tīkā	120
115. Ālambana-parīkṣā-tīkā	120
116. Santānāntara-siddhi-tīkā	121
117. Candra Gomin	121
118. His Wanderings	122
119. His Date	123
120. Nyāyāloka-siddhi	123
121. Ravi Gupta	123
122. Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti	124
123. Viśālāmalavatī	124
124. Jinendra Bodhi	124
125. Śānta Rakṣita	124
126. Vāda-nyāya-vṛtti-vipaṇcitārtha	125
127. Tattva-saṁgraha-kārikā	125
128. Subject of the work	126
129. Kamala-śīla	129
130. Nyāya-bindu-pūrva-pakṣe-saṁkṣipta	129
131. Tattva-saṁgraha-pañjikā	130
132. Kalyāṇa Rakṣita	130
133. Vāhyārtha-siddhi-kārikā	130
134. Śruti-parīkṣā	130
135. Anyāpoha-vicāra-kārikā	130
136. Iśvara-bhaṅga-kārikā	130
137. Dharmottarācārya	131
138. Nyāya-bindu-tīkā	131
139. Pramāṇa-parīkṣā	132
140. Apoha-nāma-prakarana	132
141. Pāra-loka-siddhi	132
142. Kṣaṇa-bhaṅga-siddhi	132
143. Pramāṇa-viniścaya-tīkā	132
144. Mukta-kumbha	133
145. Kṣaṇa-bhaṅga-siddhi-vyākhyā	133
146. Arcata	133
147. Hetu-bindu-vivarana	133
148. Dāna-śīla	134
149. Pustaka-pāṭhopāya	134
150. Jina Mitra	135
151. Nyāya-bindu-piṇḍārtha	135
152. Prajñākara Gupta	135
153. Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra	135
154. Sahāvalambha-niścaya	136
155. Ācārya Jetāri	136
156. His date	136



	PAGE
157. Hetu-tattva-upadeśa	136
158. Dharma-dharmi-viniścaya	136
159. Bālāvatāra-tarka	137
160. Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra-ṭikā	137
161. Jina	137
162. Jñāna-śrī	137
163. Pramāṇa-viniścaya-ṭikā	138
164. Kārya-kāraṇa-bhāva-siddhi	138
165. Tarka-bhāṣā	138
166. Ratnavajra	139
167. Yukti-prayoga	139
168. Ratnākara Sānti and Ratnakīrti	140
169. Vijñapti-mātra-siddhi	140
170. Antar-vyāpti	140
171. Vāk-praja	141
172. Yamāri	141
173. Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra-ṭikā	141
174. Śaṅkarānanda	142
175. Pramāṇa-vārtika-ṭikā	142
176. Sambandha-parīkṣānusāra	142
177. Apoha-siddhi	143
178. Pratibandhasiddhi	144

APPENDIX A.

The University of Nālandā	145
-----------------------------------	-----

APPENDIX B.

The Pāla Kings	148
------------------------	-----

APPENDIX C.

The University of Vikramaśilā	150
---------------------------------------	-----



PREFACE.

WITH the object of drawing the attention of scholars to the vast literature of the Mediæval school of Indian Logic, I have in the present thesis embodied the results of some of my researches into it.¹ The Mediæval Logic of India is divided into two principal systems, *viz.*, the Jaina and the Buddhist. The materials of the Jaina portion of my thesis were derived from several rare Jaina manuscripts procured from Western India and the Deccan. I have also used the Jaina manuscripts of the Asiatic Society of Bengal and the numerous Jaina works printed in Bombay, Benares and Calcutta. From the footnotes of my thesis it will be evident that I have frequently used Professor Peterson's Reports of Operations in Search of Sanskrit manuscripts in the Bombay Circle. Though the Professor has said nothing in particular about Logic and Logicians, he has given a general index of Jaina authors which has been of the greatest use to me. I have not heard of any scholar who has yet written any special account of the Jaina Logic. Dr. Herman Jacobi's "Eine Jaina-Dogmatik" printed in Leipzig is an annotated translation of Umāsvāti's Tattvārthādhigama Sūtra, an ancient Jaina work on general philosophy and not a special treatise on Logic. A short time ago I sent a proof of my account of the Jaina Logic to Dr. Jacobi who very graciously returned it with a few marginal glosses which have been most thankfully accepted and embodied in the foot-notes of this thesis.

To show how generously that most eminent authority on Jainism condescended to help me, I quote here the

¹ Some of these researches were published in the "Journal" of the Asiatic Society of Bengal during the last two years.



letter which he wrote in communicating to me his suggestions:

Bonn, 21st October, 1907.

Niebuhrstrasse 59.

DEAR SIR,

I have received your kind letter and the proofs of the *Jaina Logic*, and I heartily congratulate you on the work you have done. It will prove very useful, for you have brought together a mass of information which is not of easy access to many. In looking over the proofs I have made some marginal glosses to show you where I think you might alter your statement. Of course, everything is left to your decision.

I shall be glad to see your whole book, as I take great interest in Indian Logic and I have myself written an article on it principally for the information of our Logicians who as a rule know nothing about what has been done in this branch of Philosophy by Indian thinkers. I shall therefore feel obliged if you can spare me a copy of your work.

With kind regards,

I am,

Yours sincerely,

H. JACOBI.

A proof of the *Jaina Logic* was also sent to two oriental authorities on Jainism—Muni Dharmavijaya and his pupil Sri Indravijaya at Benares. I owe them a great debt of gratitude for the kind assistance which they cheerfully rendered to me by going through the proof and offering certain suggestions and observations which have been incorporated in the foot-notes of this thesis.

As to the *Buddhist Logic*, no systematic information is available from Pāli texts as there is not a single regular treatise on Logic in the Pāli language; but references to ancient Brahmanic Logic can be gleaned from the publications of the Pali Text Society of London and also from other Pali works printed elsewhere. The *Buddhist Sanskrit* works on Logic of the Middle Age are now almost extinct in India. A few of them, which are available in Chinese versions, have been noticed by Dr. Sugiura in his "*Hindu Logic as preserved in China and Japan*." But almost all the *Buddhist Sanskrit* works on Logic



are carefully preserved in faithful translations in Tibet. The materials of that portion of my thesis, which deals with Buddhist Logic, were chiefly derived from the Hodgson Collection of Tibetan xylographs deposited in the India Office, London, and the large number of Tibetan block-prints brought down to Calcutta from Gyantse during the British Mission to Tibet in 1904. I also consulted almost all the Tibetan manuscripts and block-prints bearing on Logic that lie hidden in the Tibetan monasteries of Labrang and Phodang in Sikkim which I visited during May and June 1907.¹ For the historical account of the Buddhist authors I have chiefly depended on Lama Tārānātha's Tibetan history of Indian Buddhism translated into German by A. Schiefner under the designation of "*Geschichte des Buddhismus*," and the Tibetan historical work called *Pag-sam-jon-zang* edited in the original Tibetan by Rai Sarat Chandra Das, Bahadur, C.I.E., in Calcutta. Some most important historical facts regarding the Buddhist Logicians and their works have been discovered from the colophons at the end of each of the Tibetan works which I have examined.

It was mainly through the influence of Mr. F. W. Thomas that I was enabled to borrow the Tibetan xylographs of the India Office, London, and I avail myself of this opportunity of acknowledging my humble appreciation of the generosity of that distinguished scholar. My respectful thanks are also due to the Government of India, who kindly lent me several block-prints out of the vast Tibetan collection brought down to Calcutta by the Tibet Mission of 1904. I should be guilty of great ingratitude if I were not to mention my obligations to Mr. A. Earle, I.C.S., Director of Public Instruction, Bengal, Mr. C. H. Bompas, I.C.S., Deputy Commissioner,

¹ Subsequently in October 1908 I visited Pamiangehi, which is another very old monastery in Sikkim, where all facilities were kindly afforded to me by their Highnesses the Maharaja and Maharani of Sikkim as well as by Mr. Crawford, I.C.S., the then Deputy Commissioner of Darjeeling.—S. C. V.



Darjeeling, and Mr. Claude White, C.I.E., Political Resident, Sikkim, for the kind help they gave me in getting access to the Tibetan Monasteries of Labrang and Phodang in Sikkim.

For a time I was quite bewildered by the enormous store of material on Indian Logic which I had collected, and it took me many a month to select and classify a portion of it for the purpose of this thesis. When the compilation of the paper was finished, and the work was passing through the press, Mr. W. W. Hornell, B.A., of the Indian Educational Service, kindly undertook to revise it, but he was able to revise only the first chapter of the Jaina Logic before leaving India. Accordingly, the rest of the work was, at my request, revised by Mr. W. C. Wordsworth, M.A., of the Presidency College, Calcutta. I am deeply indebted to both these gentlemen for their kind courtesy and assistance.

Whatever the merits or the utility of the present contribution may be, it has had the rare good fortune and privilege of having been looked through by a savant with whom it would be an impertinence to name in the same breath any other living authorities, oriental or occidental, on Indian philosophy. This savant, whose learning is equalled by his modesty and willingness to assist beginners in their uphill work, is no other than our revered Dr. G. Thibaut, M.A., Ph.D., D.Sc., C.I.E., now Registrar of the Calcutta University, which post may he fill long so that our countrymen may continue to derive benefit from his vast erudition.

SATIS CHANDRA VIDYABHUSANA.



INTRODUCTION.

Logic is generally designated in India as Nyāya-śāstra. It is also called Tarka-śāstra, Hetu-vidyā, Pramāṇa-śāstra, Ānvikṣikī and Phakkikā-śāstra.

Indian Logic may be divided into three principal schools, viz., the Ancient (600 B.C.—400 A.D.), the Mediæval (400 A.D.—1200 A.D.), and the Modern (1200 A.D.—1850 A.D.). The Three Schools of Indian Logic. Nyāya-sūtra by Akṣapāda Gautama is the foremost, though by no means the first, work on Logic of the Ancient School; the Pramāṇa-samuccaya by Dignāga is a representative work of the Mediæval School, while the Tattva cintāmaṇi by Gaṅgeśa Upādhyāya is the main text-book of the Modern School. These three works have, since their composition, enjoyed a very wide popularity, as is evident from the numerous commentaries that have from time to time centred round them. A few of the commentaries are mentioned below:—

The Ancient School of Logic.

Text.

1. Nyāya-sūtra by Akṣapāda Gautama.

Commentaries.

2. Nyāya bhāṣya by Vātsyāyana.
3. Nyāya-vārtika by Udyotakara.
4. Nyāya-vārtika-tātparya-ṭikā by Vācaspati Miśra.
5. Nyāya-vārtika-tātparya-ṭikā-parisuddhi by Udayanācārya.
6. Nyāyālaṅkāra by Śrī Kaṇṭha.
7. Nyāya-vṛtti by Abhayatilakopādhyāya.
8. Nyāya-vṛtti by Viśvanātha.

The Mediæval School of Logic.

Text.

1. Pramāṇa-samuccaya by Dignāga.

Commentaries.

2. Pramāṇa-samuccaya-vṛtti by Dignāga.
3. Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā by Dharmakīrti.
4. Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti by Dharmakīrti.
5. Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā by Devendrabodhi.
6. Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā-ṭikā by Sākyabodhi.
7. Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti by Ravi Gupta. [drabodhi.]
8. Pramāṇa-samuccaya-ṭikā (Viśālāmalavatī-nāma) by Jinen-



9. *Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra* by Prajñākara Gupta.
10. *Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra-ṭīkā* by Jina.
11. *Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra* by Yamāri.
12. *Pramāṇa-vārtika-ṭīkā* by Saṅkarānanda.

The Modern School of Logic.

Text.

1. *Tattva-cintāmaṇi* by Gaṅgeśa Upādhyāya.

Commentaries.

2. *Tattva-cintāmaṇi Prakāśa* by Rucidatta.
3. *Tattva Āloka* by Jayadeva Miśra.
4. *Tattva Didhiti* by Raghunātha Śiromaṇi.
5. *Tattva Rahasya* by Mathurānātha.
6. *Tattva Dipanī* by Kṛṣṇakānta.
7. *Tattva Tīkā* by Kaṇāda Tarkavāgiśa.
8. *Tattva Āloka-sāra-mañjarī* by Bhavānanda.
9. *Tattva Āloka-darpaṇa* by Maheśa Thakkura.
10. *Tattva Āloka-kaṇṭhakoddhāra* by Mādhu Sūdana Thakkura.
11. *Tattva Āloka-rahasya* by Mathurānātha. [pati.]
12. *Tattva Didhiti-vyākhyā-vivecana* by Rudra Nyāyavācas-
13. *Tattva Didhiti-ṭippanī* by Jagadīśa.
14. *Tattva Didhiti-ṭīkā* by Gadādhara.
15. *Tattva Didhiti-sāramañjarī* by Bhavānanda.
16. *Tattva Bhavānandī vyākhyā* by Mahādeva Paṇḍita.
17. *Tattva Kālīśaṅkari-patrikā* by Kālīśaṅkara.
18. *Tattva Cāndrī-patrikā* by Candra Nārāyaṇa.
19. *Tattva Raudrī-patrikā* by Rudra Nārāyaṇa.

etc.

etc.

etc.

Besides these there are numerous other texts and commentaries on Logic which belong to one or another of the three schools mentioned above.

I shall say here nothing about the ancient and modern schools of Logic, my whole attention will

The Jaina system of
Mediæval Logic.

be devoted to the mediæval school alone.

It is perhaps known to very few scholars that the Mediæval Logic was almost entirely in the hands of the Jainas and Buddhists. For one thousand years, from 600 B.C. to 400 A.D., the Jainas and Buddhists were fully occupied in questions of metaphysics and religion though there are occasional references to Logic in their works of that period. At about 400 A.D. began an epoch when they seriously took up the problems of Logic, and all the text-books on the Jaina and Buddhist systems of Logic date at or after that time. Ujjainī in Malwa and Valabhī in Guzerat were the scenes of activity of the Jaina Logicians of the Svetāmbara sect. The Digambaras flourished principally in Pāṭaliputra and Drāviḍa.

(including Karmāta) about the 8th century A.D. The Nyāyavātāra by Siddhasena Divākara, dated about 533 A.D., was the first systematic work on the Jaina Logic.

The real founders of the Mediæval Logic were the Buddhists.

The Buddhist system of Mediæval Logic.

The first batch of the Buddhist Logicians came principally from Gāndhāra (modern Peshwar) on the Punjab frontier.

Ayodhyā (Oudh) was the scene of their activity. Unfortunately we have not before us any of the original Sanskrit works on Logic produced by them. We may, however, form an approximate estimate of their Logic from the works on the Yogācāra philosophy by Maitreya, Asaṅga and Vasubandhu recovered from the Chinese sources. About 500 A.D.¹ the Huns conquered Gāndhāra, and their leaders Mihirakula and others perpetrated terrible atrocities on the Buddhists to the great detriment of Buddhistic studies there. Asaṅga and Vasubandhu (and perhaps Maitreya too) passed the best days of their lives in Ayodhyā and wrote most of their works there. King Vikramāditya who reigned in Ayodhyā about 480 A.D.² was at first a patron of the Sāṃkhya philosophy but afterwards greatly supported Buddhism through the influence of Vasubandhu. Bālāditya, who succeeded Vikramāditya to the throne of Ayodhyā, was a pupil of Vasubandhu and a supporter of Buddhism. The Buddhist Logic of the Yogācāra school appears thus to have originated in Ayodhyā and flourished there during 400-500 A.D. under Kings Vikramāditya and Bālāditya.

The second batch of the Buddhist Logicians flourished in Drāviḍa (the Deccan) during 500-700 A.D. when the Buddhist kings of the Pallava dynasty were supreme there. Ācārya Dignāga, about 500 A.D., was the oldest logician of Drāviḍa whose works are still extant, in faithful translations. Another logician of eminence of the Drāviḍa school was Dharmakīrti who lived about 650 A.D. His Nyāyabindu, and a commentary on it by Dharmottara called Nyāya-bindu-ṭīkā, are the only systematic works on Buddhist Logic which have come down to us in their Sanskrit originals. They would have certainly disappeared from India like a hundred other works of their kind, had it not been that a Jaina logician named Mallavādin had written a gloss on them. Seeing that the gloss would be useless without the text and commentary, the Jainas preserved all three. The Nyāyabindu, together with the commentary, preserved

¹ Vide Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World, vol. I., pp. xv, 168.

² Vide Takakusu's *Paramārtha's Life of Vasubandhu* published in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, January 1905, p. 36.



among the palm-leaf manuscripts in the Jaina temple of Sāntinātha, Cambay, has been published by Professor Peterson in the Bibliotheca Indica series of Calcutta. With the downfall of the Pallavas, Logic disappeared from Drāvida. Vinayāditya of the Western Chalukya dynasty about 696 A.D. put a check to the power of the Pallavas, while Vikramāditya II, of the same dynasty, about 733 A.D., seized Kāñci, their capital.¹ The Chalukyas were Vaisnavas, and their conquest of Kāñci was really a triumph of the Brahmanic religion over Buddhism. At about 788 A.D. the great Brāhmaṇa preacher Saṅkarācārya appeared, and Buddhism became gradually extinct in Drāvida.

The third and fourth batches of Buddhist Logicians flourished simultaneously in Kāśmīra and Bengal (including Behar). Ravi Gupta, 725 A.D., was the earliest logician of the Kāśmīra school. At this time Kāśmīra was governed by the illustrious King Lalitāditya or Muktāpīḍa (about 695—732 A.D.), who built a large vihāra with a stūpa at Huskapur.² At the same time there was a great demand for Sanskrit Buddhist books in Tibet with the thorough opening of her intercourse with India in the 8th century A.D. King Khri-ral (otherwise known as Ral-pa-can) in the 9th century A.D. employed numerous Indian Pandits and Tibetan Lamas to translate Sanskrit books into Tibetan. The propaganda of translations went on in full force up to about 1101 A.D., when the glorious reign of Śrī Harsa Deva (1089—1101 A.D.), who was a patron of learning, both Brāhmaṇic and Buddhistic,³ came to a close. The Buddhist monasteries and Tibetan Lamas did not altogether disappear from Kāśmīra until the establishment of Mahomedan rule in that country in 1341 A.D., when her intercourse with Tibet ceased. Henceforth we hear no more of logicians flourishing in Kāśmīra.

In Bengal and Behar Logic flourished extensively during 700-1200 A.D., when the Buddhist kings of the Pāla dynasty reigned there. Candra Gomin, about 700 A.D., was the first logician of the Bengal school. With the downfall of the Pāla kings in 1139 A.D., Buddhist Logic disappeared from Bengal. The splendid monastery of Vikramaśilā is said to have been destroyed in 1203 A.D. (*vide* Appendix C).

In the Middle Age there were several important universities or centres of Buddhistic learning in India, such as Kāñcīpura, Nālandā, Odantapurī, Śrī Dhānyakaṭaka, Kāśmīra and

¹ Vide Sewell's "Antiquities of Madras," vol. II, pp. 150-151.

² Vide Stein's translation of Rājatarāṅgi IV—188.

³ Dharmottarācārya's Pāralokasiddhi was translated into Tibetan in Kāśmīra at the monastery of Ratnaraśmi during the reign of Śrī Harsa (*vide* Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, folio 270).



Vikramaśilā. The Buddhist logicians belonged to one or another of these universities or centres of learning. On the extinction of these Buddhistic universities, the Brahmanic universities of Mithilā and Nadia grew up. These last, in their turn, are now declining, being unable to make headway against the more scientific methods of study which are developing under the influence of the Calcutta University, established by the Imperial British Government in 1857, with the object of encouraging Eastern and Western learning side by side. In spite of strenuous efforts made by the British Government to foster study and research in Indigenous Logic, it is still at its lowest ebb, as the degrees of a modern University are held in greater regard than those of the archaic Universities of Mithilā and Nadia; and as it is often alleged that in comparison with the Logic of Europe, Indian Logic though subtle is cumbrous in its method, forbidding in its language, and less profitable in its material results.

SATIS CHANDRA VIDYABHUSANA.

CALCUTTA,
December, 1907.



BOOK I.

The Jaina Logic.

CHAPTER I.

THE ERA OF TRADITION (*circa* 607 B.C.—453 A.D.).

THE JINAS AND MAHĀVĪRA.

1. The Jainas maintain that their religion is coeval with time. According to their traditions there appeared at various periods in the world's history sages whom they call *Jinas*, conquerors of their passions, or *Tīrthaṅkaras*, that is, builders of a landing place in the sea of existence. These sages preached the religion of the Jainas. The Jainas hold that in every cycle of time (*utsarpiṇī* or *avasarpiṇī-kāla*) 24 sages are born. The first sage of the last series was Rṣabhadeva, the 24th was Mahāvīra or Vardhamāna, who attained *nirvāṇa* at Pāvā in 527 B.C.¹ The scriptures which the Jainas obey are founded on the teachings of Mahāvīra. No one disputes this, and scholars generally regard Mahāvīra as the founder of Jainism, and hold that the theory of the existence of *Jinas* previous to him, except Pārśvanātha the 23rd Tīrthaṅkara, was a subsequent invention.

¹ पञ्चमस्य वसु पञ्चमास जुदं गमिषु वीरशिवुदो समराजो । (Trilokasāra of the Digambara sect). "Mahāvīra attained *nirvāṇa* 605 years 5 months before the Śaka King (78 A.D.) came to the throne," that is, in 527 B.C. As he lived 72 years he must have been born in 599 B.C.

According to Vicāraśreṇī of Merutuṅga, Tīrthakalpa of Jinaprabha Sūri, Vicāra-sāra-prakarana, Tapūgaccha-pattāvalī, etc., of the Svetāmbara sect Mahāvīra attained *nirvāṇa* 470 years before Vikrama Samvat or in B.C. 527.

Dr. Jacobi of Bonn, in his letter dated the 21st October 1907, kindly writes to me as follows:—

"There is however another tradition which makes this event [*viz.* the *nirvāṇa* of Mahāvīra] come off 60 years later, in 467 B.C. (see *Parīṣiṣṭa Parvan*, Introduction, p. 4 f.; also *Kalpasūtra*, Introduction, p. 8). The latter date cannot be far wrong because Mahāvīra died some years before the Buddha whose death is now placed between 470-480 B.C."



THE SVETĀMBARAS AND THE DIGAMBARAS.

2. The Jainas are divided into two sects, the *Svetāmbaras*, those who are clothed in white, and the *Digambaras*, those who are sky-clad or naked. The *Svetāmbaras* claim to be more ancient than the *Digambaras*, whose existence as a separate sect is said to date from A.D. 82,¹ i.e., 609 years after the attainment of *nirvāṇa* by Mahāvira.

INDRABHŪTI GAUTAMA (607 B.C.—515 B.C.).

3. The teachings of Mahāvira as represented in the scriptures are said to have been collected² by a disciple of his called Indrabhūti. This disciple is often known as Gautama or Gotama. He was a *Kevalin*³ and the first of the Gaṇa-dharas⁴ or leaders of the assembly. His father's name was Brāhmaṇa Vasubhūti, and his mother's name was Brāhmaṇī Pṛthvī. He was born in

¹ The Svetāmbaras say :—इष्वास सद्यार्द्रं नवुत्तरार्द्रं तर्दया सिद्धिंशयस्स वीरस्स नो बोद्धियाण दिङ्गो रत्तवीरपुरे समुपपन्ना । “The Digambara doctrine was preached in Rathavīrapura 609 years after the attainment of *nirvāṇa* of Mahāvira” (*Āvaśyaka nirvṛtya*—52). But the Digambaras deny this and say that the Svetāmbaras rose in Vikrama 136 or 79 A.D. Cf. *Bhadra-bāhucarita* IV. 55 :

इते विक्रमभूपाले षट्त्रिंशदधिके शते ।
गतेऽब्दानामभूजोके मर्तं शेताम्बराभिधम् ।
अथ सत्यपिसम्पन्नं दत्तार्थं जिनभाषितम् ।
द्वादशाङ्गदुर्लभं सोपाङ्गं गौतमो व्यधात् ॥

(Jaina *Harivaṃśa Purāṇa*.)

Indrabhūti Gautama and Sudharma Svāmi were the joint compilers of the Jaina scriptures. But Indrabhūti became a *Kevalin* or attained *kevalajñāna* (absolute knowledge) on the day on which Mahāvira attained *nirvāṇa*. He did not therefore occupy the chair of his teacher Mahāvira, but relinquished it to his spiritual brother Sudharma Svāmi. Cf. *रत्तभूतिप्रभृतौनां त्रिपदी व्याचरत् प्रभुः* ॥ (*Hemacandra's Mahāvīracarita*, chap. v, MSS. lent by Muni Dharmavijaya and Indravijaya).

³ Possessor of absolute knowledge. For a further reference to this title see R. G. Bhandarkar's Report, 1883-84, p. 122.

* यत्प्रज्ञाप्रसरेऽतिशयिनि तथा प्राक्षेयशैलोऽब्जले
जैनो गौरचरन्निपद्यपि यथा सद्यः पदैः कीटिशः ।
अङ्गोपाङ्गमहोदया समभवत्तैलोक्यसंचारिणौ
वन्द्योऽसौ गणभञ्जगच्छयगुदनाम्नेन्द्रभूतिः सताम् ॥ ४ ॥

(*Siddhajayanti-caritra-tīkā*, noticed in Peterson's 3rd Report, App. I, p. 38.)



the village of Gorbara¹ in Magadha and died at Guṇava in Rājagṛha (Rājgir) at the age of ninety-two, 12 years after the attainment of *nirvāṇa* by Mahāvira.² Assuming that Mahāvira attained *nirvāṇa* in 527 B.C., Indrabhūti's birth must be assigned to 607 B.C. and his death to 515 B.C.

THE CANONICAL SCRIPTURES OF THE JAINAS.

4. Those scriptures of the Jainas which are generally regarded as canonical are divided into 45 *siddhāntas* or *āgamas* classified as 11 *Āngas*, 12 *Upāngas*, etc. "For the benefit of children, women, the old, and the illiterate,"³ these were composed in the Ardha-Māgadhī or Prākṛta language. On the same principle the scriptures of the Buddhist canon were originally written in Māgadhī or Pāli. It is maintained that originally the *Angas* were 12 in number. The 12th *Anga*, which was called the *Dṛṣṭivāda* or the presentation of views, was written in Sanskrit.⁴

5. The *Dṛṣṭivāda* is not extant. It consisted apparently of five parts, in the first of which logic is said to have been dealt with. The *Dṛṣṭivāda* is reputed to have existed in its entirety at the time of Sthūlabhadra⁵ who, according to the *Tapāgachapattāvalī*, died in the year in which the 9th Nanda was killed by Candragupta (i.e., about 327 B.C.). By 474 A.D. the *Dṛṣṭivāda*

१ श्रीमन्मंममधेयु गोवर्धर इति शमोऽभिरामः श्रिया
ततोऽप्यश्मममध्वचित्तमनिर्गम श्रीवैरसेवाविधौ ।
ज्योतिःसंशयमौतमान्मयवियत्प्रद्योतनश्रीमर्षि
नापोनोनेसुवर्णवर्णवपुर्भक्त्येन्द्रभूतिं सुवे ॥

(Gotamastotra by Jinaprabha Sūri, extracted in *Kāvya-mālā*, 7th Guccaka, p. 110).

² For particulars about Indrabhūti Gautama, vide Dr. J. Klatt's *Pattāvalī* of the *Kharataragaccha* in the *Indian Antiquary*, Vol. XI, Sept. 1882, p. 246; and Weber's *Die Handschriften-verzeichnisse der Königl. Bibliothek zu Berlin*, pp. 983 and 1030, in which are noticed *Sarvarājagaṇi's Vṛtti* on *Ganadhara-sārdha-śatakam* of Jinadattasūri, and *Sri-pattāvalī-vācanā* of the *Kharataragaccha*.

³ Haribhadra-sūri, in his *Daśa-vaikālika-vṛtti* (Chap. III), observes:—

बालकौटुम्बसूत्राणां श्रुतां चारिषकाङ्क्षिणाम् ।
अनुपदार्थं तत्त्वज्ञैः सिद्धान्तः प्रालतः कुतः ॥

⁴ Vardhamāna-sūri, in his *Ācāra-dinakara*, quotes the following passage from *Āgama*:—

मुत्तुष दिङ्निवार्य कालिय उद्धालियं सिद्धं ।
श्रीबालवायणत्वं पादय मुदयं जिनवरेडिं ॥

⁵ Vide *Cūṛṇika* of Nandī Sūtra, page 478, published by Dhanapat Sing, Calcutta, and Peterson's 4th Report on Sanskrit MSS., p. cxxxvi.



of Mahāvira, that is, up to 365 B.C., and that the second¹ to 515 years from the *nirvāṇa* of Mahāvira, that is, up to 12 B.C. They do not state definitely which of these Bhadrabāhus was the author of the *Daśavaikālika-niryukti*, but they hold the view that the second was the author of several of the existing Jaina works. The *Svetāmbara* records do not contain any mention of the second Bhadrabāhu, but in the *Reiṃaṇḍala-prakaraṇa-vṛtti*,² a commentary of the *Svetāmbaras*, and in the *Caturviṃśati prabandha* it is stated that Bhadrabāhu lived in the south in *Pratiṣṭhāna* and was a brother of *Varāhamihira*. Now *Varāhamihira* is popularly believed to have lived in the first century B.C. It is possible therefore, even according to the *Svetāmbaras*, that the *Daśavaikālika-niryukti* was the work of a commentator who, to rely on popular belief, lived about the time of the opening of the Christian era.

11. Whenever he lived, the author of the *Daśavaikālikaniryukti* also wrote commentaries (*niryuktis*) on the following Jaina scriptures :—*Āvaśyaka-sūtra*, *Uttarādhyayana-sūtra*, *Ācārāṅga-sūtra*, *Sūtra-kṛtāṅga-sūtra*, *Daśāśruta-skandha-sūtra*, *Kalpa-sūtra*, *Vyavahāra-sūtra*, *Sōrya-prajñāpti-sūtra*, and *Rāibhāṣita-sūtra*.

12. Bhadrabāhu did not set himself to analyse knowledge with the object of evolving a system of logic. His object was to illustrate the truth of certain principles of the Jaina religion. To do this, he, in his *Daśavaikālika-niryukti*,³ elaborated a syllogism consisting of ten parts (*daśāvayava-vākya*) and then demonstrated how the religious principles of Jainism satisfied the conditions of this formula.

तयोर्विनेयः कृतविद्यभद्रः

श्रीशूलभद्रश्च ददातु मर्म ॥ १४ ॥

Gurvāvali by Munisundara-sūri published in the *Jaina Yaśovijaya-granthamālā* of Benares, p. 4.

¹ Vide the *Sarasvatī-gaccha-paṭṭāvalī* in the *Indian Antiquary*, October 1891, and March 1892.

² Vide Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's Reports on Sanskrit MSS. during 1883-84, p. 138. Bhadrabāhu must have lived as late as the 6th century A.D., if he was really a brother of that *Varāhamihira* who was one of the nine Gems at the court of *Vikramāditya*. Munis Dharmavijaya and Indravijaya maintain that Bhadrabāhu's brother was not the same *Varāhamihira* that adorned the court of *Vikramāditya*.

³ ते उ पदत्र विभक्तौ चेत्त-विभक्तौ विषयस्यपडिसेही ।

दिङ्गते आसंका तस्यपडिसेही निगमणं च ॥ १४२ ॥

Daśavaikālika-niryukti, p. 74, published under the patronage of Dhanapat Sing by the Nirṇaya Sāgara Press, Bombay; and Dr. E. Leumann's edition of *Daśavaikālika-niryukti*, p. 649.



13. The following is an example:—

(1) The proposition (*Pratijñā*),—"to refrain from taking life
The Syllogism. is the greatest of virtues."

(2) The limitation of the proposition (*Pratijñā-vibhakti*),—"to refrain from taking life is the greatest of virtues according to the Jaina scriptures."

(3) The reason (*Hetu*),—"to refrain from taking life is the greatest of virtues, because those who so refrain are loved by the gods and to do them honour is an act of merit for men."

(4) The limitation of the reason (*Hetu-vibhakti*),—"none but those who refrain from taking life are allowed to reside in the highest place of virtue."

(5) The counter-proposition (*Vipakṣa*),—"but those who despise the Jaina scriptures and take life are said to be loved by the gods and men regard doing them honour as an act of merit. Again, those who take life in sacrifices are said to be residing in the highest place of virtue. Men, for instance, salute their fathers-in-law as an act of virtue, even though the latter despise the Jaina scriptures and habitually take life. Moreover, those who perform animal sacrifices are said to be beloved of the gods."

(6) The opposition to the counter-proposition (*Vipakṣa-pratiṣedha*),—"those who take life as forbidden by the Jaina scriptures do not deserve honour, and they are certainly not loved by the gods. It is as likely that fire will be cold as that they are loved by the gods or that it is regarded by men as an act of merit to do them honour. Buddha, Kapila and others, really not fit to be worshipped, were honoured for their miraculous sayings, but the Jaina *Tirthaṅkaras* are honoured because they speak absolute truth."

(7) An instance or example (*Dṛṣṭānta*),—"the *Arhats* and *Sādhus* do not even cook food, lest in so doing they should take life. They depend on householders for their meals."

(8) Questioning the validity of the instance or example (*Āśaṅkā*),—"the food which the householders cook is as much for the *Arhats* and *Sādhus* as for themselves. If, therefore, any insects are destroyed in the fire, the *Arhats* and *Sādhus* must share in the householders' sin. Thus the instance cited is not convincing."

(9) The meeting of the question (*Āśaṅkā-pratiṣedha*),—"the *Arhats* and *Sādhus* go to householders for their food without giving notice and not at fixed hours. How, therefore, can it be said that the householders cooked food for the *Arhats* and *Sādhus*? Thus the sin, if any, is not shared by the *Arhats* and *Sādhus*."

(10) Conclusion (*Nigamana*),—"to refrain from taking life is therefore the best of virtues, for those who so refrain are loved by the gods, and to do them honour is an act of merit for men."

14. Bhadrabāhu in his *Sūtra-kṛtāṅga-niryukti*¹ mentions another principle of the Jaina logic called *Syādvāda* (*Syat* "may be" and *Vāda* "assertion," or the assertion of possibilities) or *Sapta-bhaṅgī-naya* (the sevenfold paralogism).

15. The *Syādvāda*² is set forth as follows:—(1) May be, it is, (2) may be, it is not, (3) may be, it is and it is not, (4) may be, it is indescribable, (5) may be, it is and yet is indescribable, (6) may be, it is not and it is also indescribable, (7) may be, it is and it is not and it is also indescribable.

UMĀSVĀTĪ (1—85 A.D.).

16. Jaina philosophy recognises seven categories, viz., (1) the soul (*Jīva*), (2) the soul-less (*Ajīva*), (3) action (*Āśrava*), (4) bondage (*Bandha*), (5) restraint (*Samvara*), (6) destruction of the consequences of action (*Nirjarā*), and (7) release or salvation (*Mokṣa*). According to the *Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra* which with a *Bhāṣya* or commentary was composed by one Umāsvātī, these categories can only be comprehended by *Pramāṇa*, which in this *sūtra* fluctuates between the two meanings of valid knowledge and the sources of valid knowledge, and of *Naya*, the method of comprehending things from particular standpoints.

17. This Umāsvātī is better known as Vācaka-śramaṇa : he was also called Nāgaravācaka, this title being probably a reference to his *Sākhā* (spiritual genealogy). The Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya calls him Umāsvātī-vācakācārya.³ He lived for 48 years, 8 months, and 6 days and attained *nirvāṇa* in Samvat

१ अस्मिन्मयं किरियाणं
अकिरियाणं च चोर चुल्लसौति ।
अभाषिय समद्वी
वेणदयणं च वत्तीसा ॥ २१ ॥

(*Sūtra-kṛtāṅga-niryukti*, skandha 1, adhyāya 12, p. 448, edited by Bhīm Sing Manak and printed in the *Nir-naya Sāgara Press*, Bombay.)

Cf. *Sthānāṅga Sūtra*, p. 316, published by Dhanapat Sing, Benares edition.

² Cf. *Sarvadarśana-saṁgraha* translated by Cowell and Gough, p. 55. For full particulars about *Syādvāda* or *Sapta-bhaṅgī-naya* vide *Septa-bhaṅgī-taraṅgiṇī* by Vimala Dāsa printed in Bombay.

³ Vide *Sarvadarśana-saṁgraha*, chapter on Jaina darśana.



142, i.e., in 85 A.D. In the Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra Umāsvāti gives the following account¹ of himself :—He was born in a village called Nyagrodhikā, but he wrote the Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra in Pāṭaliputra or Kusumapura (modern Patna). He belonged to the Kaubhīṣaṇin-gotra. His father was Svāti and he was consequently sometimes called Svāti-tanaya. He was also known as Vātsī-sūta, because his mother was Umā of the Vatsa-gotra. In the Tirthakalpa of Jinaprabhā-sūri it is stated that Umāsvāti was the author of 500 Sanskrit prakaraṇas (treatises). He is said to have belonged to the *Svetāmbara* sect though, as stated in article 2 above, it is probable that the distinction between that sect and the *Digambaras* had not yet come into existence.

18. It has been observed in article 16 above that in the Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra *Pramāṇa* Parokṣa, indirect knowledge, and *Pratyakṣa*, direct knowledge, fluctuates between the meanings of valid knowledge and the sources of valid knowledge. In its former sense

न्ययोधिकाप्रसूतेन विहरता पुरवरे कुसुमनाम्नि ।
कौभौषणिना स्वातितनयेन वानसौसुतेनार्थम् ॥ २ ॥
चरुदचनं सम्यग्गुरुकर्मेशगतं समुपधार्य ।
दुःखार्त्तं च दुरागमविद्वत्तमर्तिं लोकमवलोक्य ॥ ३ ॥
इदमुद्येनांगरवाचकेन सत्त्वानुकम्पया दध्यम् ।
तत्त्वार्थाधिगमाख्यं स्पष्टमुमास्वातिना गानम् ॥ ४ ॥

(Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra, Chap. X, p. 233, edited by Mody Keshavlal Premchand in the Bibliotheca Indica Series, Calcutta.)

A similar account is found in the commentary on the Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra by Siddhasenagani. This account is mentioned by Peterson in his 4th Report on Sanskrit Manuscripts, p. xvi.

For Further particulars about Umāsvāti see Peterson's 4th Report on Sanskrit Manuscripts, p. xvi, where he observes that in the Digambara Pāṭṭāvalī published by Dr. Hoernle in the Indian Antiquary, XX, p. 341, Umāsvāmin (probably the same as Umāsvāti) is included as the sixth Digambara Sūri of the Sarasvatī-gaccha, between Kundakunda and Lohācārya II. According to Dr. Hoernle (*vide* "Two Pāṭṭāvalīs of the Sarasvatī-gaccha" by Dr. Hoernle in the Indian Antiquary, Vol. XX, October 1891, p. 351) the date of Umāsvāmin's accession is 44 A.D., and he lived for 84 years, 8 months and 6 days. Dr. Hoernle adds, the Kāṣṭhāsāṅgha arose in the time of Umāsvāmin.

Umāsvāti's Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra with his *bhāṣya*, together with Pūjā-prakarana, Jambudvīpa-samāsa and Praśamarati, has been published by the Asiatic Society of Bengal, Calcutta, in one volume which ends thus :—

कृतिः विनाम्बराचार्यस्य महाकवेरमास्वातिवाचकस्य इति ॥

(Jambudvīpa-samāsa, p. 38, published as Appendix C to the Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra in the Bibliotheca Indica Series.)



Pramāṇa, according to this Sūtra, is of two kinds: (1) *Parokṣa*, indirect knowledge, which is acquired by the soul through external agencies such as the organs of sense, and (2) *Pratyakṣa*, direct knowledge which is acquired by the soul without the intervention of external agencies. *Parokṣa*, indirect knowledge, includes *matī*¹ and *śruta*, for these are acquired by the soul through the medium of the senses and the mind. Knowledge which is attained by *Yoga* (concentration) in its three stages of *avadhi*, *manahparyāya* and *kevala* is a species of *Pratyakṣa*, direct knowledge, because it is acquired by the soul not through the medium of the senses.

19. Umāsvāti contends² that inference (*Anumāna*), comparison (*Upamāna*), verbal testimony or reliable authority (*Āgama*), presumption (*Ārthāpatti*), probability (*Sambhava*), and non-existence (*Abhāva*) are not distinct sources of valid knowledge: he includes them under *Parokṣa* (indirect knowledge). According to his theory the majority of them are the result of the contact of the senses with the objects which they apprehend; and some of them are not sources of valid knowledge at all.

20. It is interesting to note that according to Umāsvāti and the earlier Jaina philosophers all sense-perceptions (visual perception, auditory perception, etc.) are indirect apprehensions in as much as the soul acquires them not of itself but through the medium of the senses. The words *Parokṣa* and *Pratyakṣa* are thus used by these authors in senses quite opposite to those which they bear both in Brāhmaṇic logic and in the later Jaina logic.

¹ *Matī* is knowledge of existing things acquired through the senses and the mind.

Śruta is knowledge of things (past, present and future) acquired through reasoning and study.

Avadhi is knowledge of things beyond the range of our perception.

Manahparyāya is knowledge derived from reading the thoughts of others.

Kevala is unobstructed, unconditional and absolute knowledge.

² In the *bhāṣya* on aphorism 12, of chapter 1 of the *Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra*, Umāsvāti observes:—

अनुमानोपमानागमार्थापत्तिसम्भवाभावापि च प्रमाणानीति केचिन्नान्यन्ते
तत्कथमेतदिति श्रुतीच्यते । सर्वाण्येतानि सनिष्ठुतयोरन्तर्भूतानि इन्द्रियार्थमज्ञिकर्ष-
निमित्तत्वात् ॥

(*Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra*, p. 15).

In his *bhāṣya* on 1—6 of the *Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra* Umāsvāti observes:—

चतुर्विधमित्येके ।

(*Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra*, p. 9.)

In his *bhāṣya* on 1—35 he mentions the four *Pramāṇas* thus:—

यथा वा प्रत्यक्षानुमानोपमानाप्रवचनैः प्रमाणैरेकोऽर्थः प्रतीयते स्वविषय-
नियमात् न च ता विप्रतिपन्नयो भवन्ति तद्वच्चयवादा इति ॥

(*Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra*, p. 35).



21. *Naya*¹ is the method by which things are comprehended from particular standpoints. It is of five kinds:—(1) *Naigama*, the non-distinguished (2) *Samgraha*, the general, (3) *Vyavahāra*, the practical, (4) *Rju-sūtra*, the straight expression, (5) *Sabda*, the verbal.

Naya, the method of comprehending things from particular standpoints.

22. *Naigama*, the non-distinguished, is the method by which an object is regarded as possessing both general and specific properties, no distinction being made between them. For instance, when you use the word "bamboo," you are indicating a number of properties, some of which are peculiar to the bamboo, while others are possessed by it in common with other trees. You do not distinguish between these two classes of properties.

Naigama.

23. *Samgraha*, the collective, is the method which takes into consideration generic properties only, ignoring particular properties.

Samgraha.

24. *Vyavahāra*, the practical, is the method which takes into consideration the particular only. The general without the particular is a nonentity. If you ask a person to bring you a plant, he must bring you a particular plant, he can not bring plant in general.

Vyavahāra.

25. *Rju-sūtra*, the straight expression, is the method which considers a thing as it exists at the moment, without any reference to its past or its future. It is vain to ponder over a thing as it was in the past or as it will be in the future. All practical purposes are served by considering the thing itself as it exists at the present moment. For instance, a man who in a previous birth was my son is now born as a prince, but he is of no practical use to me now. The method of *Rju-sūtra* recognises nothing but the entity itself (*bhāva*) and does not consider the name (*nāma*), the image (*sthāpanā*), or the causes which constituted it (*dravya*). The fact that a cowherd is called *Indra* does not make him lord of the heavens. An image of a king can not perform the functions of a king. The causes which exist in me now and will necessitate my being born hereafter with a different body can not enable me to enjoy that body now.

Rju-sūtra.

These four kinds of *Pramāṇa* seem to refer to those in the *Nyāya Sūtra* of the Hindu logician Akṣapāda Gautama. But the same four kinds are also referred to as sub-divisions of *Hetu* in the *Sthānāṅga Sūtra* of the Jains, p. 309, published by Dhanapat Sing and printed in Calcutta.

¹ नैगमसंग्रहव्यवहारजुसूत्रशब्दा नयाः ॥ १-२४ ॥

(Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra, p. 32.)



26. *Sabda*,¹ the verbal, is the method of correct nomenclature.

Sabda.

It is of three kinds, viz., *Sāmprata*, the suitable, *Samabhirādha*, the subtle, and *Evāmbhata*, the such-like. In Sanskrit a jar is called *ghaṭa*, *kumbha* or *kalasa*, and these are synonymous terms. *Sāmprata* consists in using a word in its conventional sense, even if that sense is not justified by its derivation. For example the word "*Satru*" according to its derivation means "destroyer," but its conventional meaning is "enemy." *Samabhirādha* consists in making nice distinctions between synonyms, selecting in each case the word which on etymological grounds is the most appropriate. *Evāmbhata* consists in applying to things such names only as their actual condition justifies. Thus a man should not be called *Sakra* (strong), unless he actually possesses the *Sakti* (strength) which the name implies.

¹ Umāsvāti in his *bhāṣya* on 1-35 observes :—

यथार्थाभिधानं शब्दः । नामादिषु प्रसिद्धपूर्वाञ्छब्दाद् अर्थे प्रत्ययः साम्प्रतः
सत्यु अर्थेषु असंक्रमः समभिरुद्धः । अज्ञानार्थयोरवभूत इति ॥

(Tattvārthādīgama-sūtra, p. 32.)



CHAPTER II.

THE HISTORICAL PERIOD (COMMENCING FROM 453 A.D.).

THE WRITTEN RECORDS OF THE JAINAS.

27. The teachings of Mahāvira as contained in the Jaina *Āgamas* are said to have been handed down by memory for several centuries until in Vira Samvat 980 or A.D. 453, they were codified in writing by Devardhi Gani,¹ otherwise known as Kṣamāśramaṇa, at a council held at Valabhi. According to this theory the authentic history of the Jaina literature commences from 453 A.D., and all that preceded that period is to be regarded as merely traditional.

SIDDHASENA DIVĀKARA (ABOUT 533 A.D.).

28. The first Jaina writer on systematic logic, during the historical period, appears to be Siddhasena Divākara. Before his time there had not perhaps existed any distinct treatise on Jaina logic, its principles having been included in the works on metaphysics and religion. It was he who for the first time laid the foundation of a science called Logic (*Nyāya*) among the Jainas by compiling a treatise called *Nyāyāvatāra*² in 32 short stanzas.

¹ Vide Dr. Klatt's *Pattāvali* of the Kharataragaccha in the Indian Antiquary, Sept. 1882, Vol. XI, p. 247; and Dr. Jacobi's *Kalpasūtra*, Introduction, p. 15. See also Vinaya Vijaya Gani's commentary on the *Kalpasūtra* which quotes the following text :—

सुखबुद्धिपुरमि नयरे ।
देवद्वि पनुद सयलसंघेदि ।
पुल्ले आगम लिहिउ ।
नवसय असो आनु बीराउ ॥ १ ॥

(Sukhabodhikā Tīkā to *Kalpasūtra*, p. 433, printed in Kathiwar by Hira Lal Harisarāja.)

In Devardhi Gani's redaction of the *Kalpasūtra* (vide Dr. Jacobi's edition of the *Kalpasūtra*, p. 67) we read :—

Samaṇassa bhagavao Mahāvīrassa jāva savva-dukkha-ppahīnassa navavāsasayāim viikkantaim dasamassa ya vāsa-sayassa, ayam aśīme samvacchare kāle gacchai itī (148).

² Vide No. 741 in the list of MSS. purchased for the Bombay Government as noticed by Peterson in his 5th Report, p. 289. A manuscript of the *Nyāyāvatāra* with *Vivṛti* was procured for me from Bhavanagara, Bombay, by Muni Dharmavijaya and his pupil Sri Indravijaya.



29. Siddhasena Divākara is also the famous author of the Sammatitarka-sūtra which is a work in Prākṛta on general philosophy containing an elaborate discussion on the principles of logic. This author, who belonged to the Svetāmbara sect, has been mentioned by Pradyumna Sūri (q.v.) in his Vicāra-sāra-prakaraṇa¹ and by Jina Sena Sūri in the Adipurāṇa dated 783 A.D.

30. Siddhasena Divākara, who was a pupil of Vṛddha-vādisūri, received the name of Kumuda-candra² at the time of ordination. He is said to have split, by the efficacy of his prayers, the Liṅga, the Brāhmaṇical symbol of Rudra, in the temple of Mahākāla at Ujjayinī, and to have called forth an image of Pārśvanātha by reciting his Kalyāṇa-mandira-stava. He is believed by Jāinas to have converted Vikramāditya to Jainism 470 years after the *nirvāṇa* of Mahāvira, that is, in 57 B.C.³

31. But Vikramāditya of Ujjainī does not seem to be so old as he has been identified by scholars with Yaśodharma Deva, king of Malwa, who, on the authority of Alberuni, defeated the Huns at Korur in 533 A.D. This view of scholars agrees well with the statement of the Chinese pilgrim Hwen-thsang, who, coming to India in 629 A.D., says that a very powerful king, presumably Vikramāditya, reigned at Ujjainī 60 years before his arrival there.⁴ Moreover, Varāhamihira, who was one of the nine Gems at the court of Vikramāditya, is known to have lived between 505 A.D. and 587 A.D.⁵ It is therefore very probable that

१ पंचेन य वरिसमर सिद्धसेनदिवायरो य जयपयडो ।

वचसर वौसदिय सङ्गयुज अञ्जरविषपङ्क ॥ २१ ॥

(Vicāra-sāra-prakaraṇa, noticed by Peterson in his 3rd Report, p. 272.)

² Cf. Prabhāvakacaritra VIII, V. 57.

³ For other particulars about Siddhasena Divākara see Dr. Klatt's *Paṭṭāvali* of the Kharataragaccha in the *Indian Antiquary*, Vol. XI, Sept. 1882, p. 247. *Vide* also Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's report on Sanskrit MSS., during 1883-84, pp. 118, 140. Also the *Prabandha-cintāmaṇi* translated by Mr. Tawney in the *Bibliotheca Indica* series of Calcutta, pp. 10-14.

⁴ *Vide* Beal's *Buddhist Records*, Vol. II, p. 261.

⁵ Varāhamihira chose Saka 427 or A.D. 505 as the initial year of his astronomical calculation, showing thereby that he lived about that time :

सम्राष्टि वेदसंस्कृतं शककालमपास्य चैवशुक्लादौ ।

अर्धशतमिते भानौ यवनपुरे सोम्य दिवसादौ ॥ ८ ॥

Pañcasiddhāntikā, chap. 1, edited by Dr. G. Thibaut and Śudhākara Dvi-vedi.

Vide also Dr. Thibaut's Introduction to the *Pañcasiddhāntikā*, p. xxx.



Vikramāditya and his contemporary Siddhasena Divākara lived at Ujjaini about 533 A.D. I am inclined to believe that Siddhasena was no other than *Kṣapapaṇaka*¹ (a Jaina sage) who is traditionally known to the Hindus to have been one of the nine Gems that adorned the court of Vikramāditya.

32. The *Nyāyāvatāra* written in Sanskrit verse gives an exposition of the doctrine of *Pramāṇa* (sources of valid knowledge) and *Naya* (the method of comprehending things from particular standpoints).

33. *Pramāṇa* is valid knowledge which illumines itself as well as other things without any obstruction. It is of two kinds: (1) direct valid knowledge or perception (*Pratyakṣa*) and (2) indirect valid knowledge (*Parokṣa*). Direct valid knowledge (*Pratyakṣa*) is two-fold: (1) practical (*Vyāvahārika*) which is the knowledge acquired by the soul through the five senses (the eye, ear, nose, tongue and touch) and the mind (*Manas*), and (2) transcendental (*Pāramārthika*) which is the infinite knowledge that comes from the perfect enlightenment of the soul: it is called *Kevala* or absolute knowledge.

34. Indirect valid knowledge (*Parokṣa*) is also of two kinds: (1) inference (*Anumāna*) and (2) verbal testimony (*Sābda*). Verbal testimony is the knowledge derived from the words of reliable persons including knowledge from scripture. Suppose a young man coming to the side of a river cannot ascertain whether the river is fordable or not, and immediately an old experienced man of the locality, who has no enmity against him, comes and tells him the river is easily fordable: the word of the old man

1 The nine Gems are:—

धन्वन्नरिः उपणकोऽमरसिंहः शङ्खु
वैतालभट्ट घटसर्पेर कालिदासाः ।
प्ल्यातो वराहमिहिरोऽपतेः सभाषा
रत्नानि वै वरवचि नैव विज्ञमस्य ॥

(Jyotirvidābharaṇa).

In the *Pañcatantra* and other Brahmanic Sanskrit works as well as in the *Avadānakalpalatā* and other Buddhist Sanskrit works the Jaina ascetics are nicknamed as *Kṣapapaṇaka*:

भगवद्भाषितं तत्तु सुभद्रेष निवेदितम् ।
श्रुत्वा उपणकः क्षिप्रमभूद्वेषविषाकुलः ॥ ८ ॥
तस्य सर्वज्ञतां वेत्ति सुभद्रो यदि मद्भिरा ।
तदेष उपणकस्य त्वच्छति यमयादरात् ॥ १९ ॥

(*Avadānakalpalatā*, *Jyotiṣkāvadāna*).



is to be accepted as a source of valid knowledge called personal testimony or *Laukika Sābda*. Scripture is also a source of valid knowledge for it lays down injunctions on matters which baffle perception and inference : for instance, it teaches that misery is the consequence of vice. Knowledge derived from this source is called scriptural testimony or *Sāstraaja Sābda*. *Scripture* is defined as that which was first cognised by a competent person, which is not such as to be passed over by others, which is not incompatible with the truths derived from perception, which imparts true instruction and which is profitable to all men and is preventive of the evil path.¹

35. Inference (*Anumāna*) is the correct knowledge of the major term (*Sādhya*) derived through the middle term (*Hetu*, reason, or *Linga*, sign) which is inseparably connected with it. It is of two kinds : (1) inference for one's own self (*Svārthanumāna*) and (2) inference for the sake of others (*Parārthanumāna*).

36. The first kind is the inference deduced in one's own mind after having made repeated observations. A man by repeated observations in the kitchen and elsewhere forms the conclusion in his mind that fire must always be an antecedent of smoke. Afterwards, he is not certain whether a hill which he sees has fire on it or not. But, noticing smoke, he at once brings to mind the inseparable connection between fire and smoke, and concludes that there must be fire on the hill. This is the inference for one's own self.

37. If the inference is communicated to others through words, it is called an inference for the sake of others. A type of this kind of inference is as follows :—

- (1) The *hill* (minor term or *Pakṣa*) is full of *fire* (major term or *Sādhya*) ;
- (2) because it is full of *smoke* (middle term or *Hetu*) ;
- (3) whatever is full of smoke is full of fire, as, e.g., a *kitchen* (example or *Dṛṣṭānta*) ;
- (4) so is this hill full of smoke (application or *Upanaya*) ;
- (5) therefore this hill is full of fire (conclusion or *Nigamaṇa*).

38. In a proposition the subject is the minor term (*Pakṣa*) and the predicate the major term (*Sādhya*).
Terms of a syllogism. The minor term is that with which the connection of the major term is to be shown : In the proposition

¹ आग्नीपक्षमनुजङ्गमदद्वेष्टिरोधकम् ।

तच्चापदेशकम् सार्वं शास्त्रं कापयचद्वनम् ॥

(Verse 9, Nyāyāvatāra).



"the hill is full of fire," the *hill* is the minor term and *fire* major term. The middle term (*Hetu*) is defined as that which cannot occur otherwise than in connection with the major term. Thus in the proposition: "the hill is full of fire because it is full of smoke," *smoke* is the middle term which cannot arise from any other thing than fire which is the major term. The example (*Dr̥ṣṭānta*) is a familiar case which assures the connection between the major term and the middle term: It is of two kinds: (1) homogeneous (*Sādharmya*), such as "the hill is full of fire because it is full of smoke, as a *kitchen*," and (2) heterogeneous (*Vaidharmya*) which assures the connection between the middle term and major term by contrariety, that is, by showing that the absence of the major term is attended by the absence of the middle term, such as "where there is no fire there is no smoke as in a *lake*."

39. In an inference for the sake of others the minor term (*Pakṣa*) must be explicitly set forth, otherwise the reasoning might be misunderstood by the opponent, *e.g.* This hill has fire because it has smoke.

This instance, if the minor term is omitted, will assume the following form:—

Having fire, | Because having smoke.

Here the opponent might not at once recollect any instance in which fire and smoke exist in union, and might mistake a lake for such an instance. In such a case the whole reasoning will be misunderstood.

40. If that of which the major term or predicate is affirmed is opposed by evidence, the public opinion, one's own statement, etc., we have that which is known as the fallacy of the minor term (*Pakṣābhāsa*) of which there are many varieties.

The semblance or fallacy of the minor term (*Pakṣābhāsa*) arises when one attributes to it as a proved fact that which is yet to be proved, or which is incapable of being proved, or when it is opposed to perception and inference, or inconsistent with the public opinion or incongruous with one's own statement, thus:—

(1) "The jar is animate (*paudgalika*)"—this is a conclusion which is yet to be proved to the opponent.

(2) "Every thing is momentary"—this is a Saugata conclusion which, according to the Jainas, is incapable of being proved.

(3) "The general (*sāmānya*) and particular (*viśeṣa*) things are without parts, are distinct from each other and are like themselves alone"—this is opposed to perception.



(4) "There is no omniscient being"—this is, according to the Jainas, opposed to inference.

(5) "The sister is to be taken as wife"—this is inconsistent with the public opinion.

(6) "All things are non-existent"—this is incongruous with one's own statement.

41. Inseparable connection (*Vyāpti*) is the invariable accompaniment of the middle term by the major term. In the inference: "this hill is full of fire, because it is full of smoke," the connection between fire and smoke, that is, the invariable presence of fire with smoke, is called *Vyāpti* or Inseparable Connection. It is of two kinds: (1) Intrinsic and (2) Extrinsic.

42. Intrinsic inseparable connection (*Antar-vyāpti*) occurs when the minor term (*pakṣa*) itself as the common abode of the middle term (*hetu*) and major term (*sādhya*) shows the inseparable connection between them, thus:—

(1) This hill (minor term) is full of *fire* (major term):

(2) because it is full of *smoke* (middle term).

Here the inseparable connection between fire and smoke is shown by the hill (minor term) in which both of them abide.

43. Extrinsic inseparable connection (*Bahir-vyāpti*) occurs when an example (*dṛṣṭānta*) from the outside is introduced as the common abode of the middle term (*hetu*) and major term (*sādhya*) to assure the inseparable connection between them, thus:—

(1) This hill is full of *fire* (major term);

(2) because it is full of *smoke* (middle term);

(3) as a *kitchen* (example).

Here the reference to the kitchen is no essential part of the inference: but is introduced from without as a common instance of a place in which fire and smoke exist together, and so it reaffirms the inseparable connection between them.

44. Some logicians hold that, that which is to be proved, that is, the major term (*sādhya*), can be established by intrinsic inseparable connection (*Antarvyāpti*) only: hence the extrinsic inseparable connection (*Bahir-vyāpti*) is superfluous.

45. The semblance of reason or fallacy of the middle term (*Hetvābhāsa*) arises from doubt, misconception or non-conception about it (the middle term). It is of three kinds:—

(1) The unproved (*Asiddha*): This is fragrant because it is a sky-lotus.

Here the reason (middle term), viz., the sky-lotus, is unreal.

(2) The contradictory (*Viruddha*): "This is fiery because it is a body of water."

Here the reason alleged is opposed to what is to be established.



(3) The uncertain (*Anaikāntika*): "Sound is eternal because it is always audible."

Here the reason or middle term is uncertain because audibility may or may not be a proof of eternity.

46. The fallacy of example (*Dr̥ṣṭāntābhāsa*) may arise in the homogeneous or heterogeneous form from a defect in the middle term (*hetu*) or major term (*sādhya*) or both; or from doubt about them.

47. Fallacies of the homogeneous example (*Sādharmya-dr̥ṣṭāntābhāsa*) are as follows:—

(1) Inference is *invalid* (major term), because it is a *source of knowledge* (middle term), like *perception* (homogeneous example).

Here the example involves a defect in the major term (*sādhya*), for perception is not invalid.

(2) Perception is *invalid* (major term), because it is a *source of valid knowledge* (middle term), like a *dream* (homogeneous example).

Here the example involves a defect in the middle term (*hetu*), for the dream is not a source of valid knowledge.

(3) The omniscient being is not *existent* (major term), because he is not *apprehended by the senses* (middle term), like a *jar* (homogeneous example).

Here the example involves a defect in both the major and middle terms (*sādhya* and *hetu*), for the jar is both existent and apprehended by the senses.

(4) This person is *devoid of passions* (major term), because he is *mortal* (middle term), like the *man in the street* (homogeneous example).

Here the example involves doubt as to the validity of the major term, for it is doubtful whether the man in the street is devoid of passions.

(5) This person is *mortal* (major term), because he is *full of passions* (middle term), like the *man in the street* (homogeneous example).

Here the example involves doubt as to the validity of the middle term, for it is doubtful, whether the man in the street is devoid of passions.

(6) This person is *non-omniscient* (major term), because he is *full of passions* (middle term), like the *man in the street* (homogeneous example).

Here the example involves doubt as to the validity of both the major and middle terms, for it is doubtful whether the man in the street is full of passions and non-omniscient.

It is stated in the *Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti* that some unnecessarily lay down three other kinds of fallacy of the homogeneous example (*Sādharmya-dr̥ṣṭāntābhāsa*), viz.:—

• (1) Unconnected (*Ananyaya*), such as: This person is *full of passions*



(major term), because he is a *speaker* (middle term), like a *certain man in Magadha* (example).

Here though a certain man in Magadha is both a *speaker* and full of passions, yet there is no inseparable connection between "being a speaker" and "being full of passions."

(2) Of connection unshown (*Apradarātānvaya*), such as:—

Sound is *non-eternal* (major term), because it is *produced* (middle term), as a jar (example).

Here though there is an inseparable connection between "produced" and "non-eternal," yet it has not been shown in the proper form as:—

"Whatever is produced is non-eternal as a jar."

(3) Of inverted connection (*Viparītānvaya*), such as:—

Sound is *non-eternal* (major term), because it is *produced* (middle term).

Here if the inseparable connection (*vyāpti*) is shown thus—

"Whatever is non-eternal is produced as a jar," instead of—

"Whatever is produced is non-eternal as a jar," the example would involve the fallacy of inverted connection.

48. Fallacies of the heterogeneous example (*Vaidharmya-dr̥ṣṭāntābhāsa*) are of six kinds, thus:—

(1) Inference is *invalid* (major term), because it is a *source of knowledge* (middle term): whatever is not invalid is not a source of knowledge, as a *dream* (heterogeneous example).

Here the example involves in the heterogeneous form a defect in the major term (*sādhya*) for the dream is really invalid though it has been cited as not invalid.

(2) Perception is *non-reflective* or *nirvikalpaka* (major term), because it is a *source of knowledge* (middle term): whatever is reflective or *savikalpaka*, is not a source of knowledge, as *inference* (heterogeneous example).

Here the example involves in the heterogeneous form a defect in the middle term (*sādhana*), for inference is really a source of knowledge though it has been cited as not such.

(3) Sound is *eternal* and *non-eternal* (major term), because it is an *existence* (middle term): whatever is not eternal and non-eternal is not an existence, as a jar (heterogeneous example).

Here the example involves in the heterogeneous form a defect in both the major and middle terms (*sādhya* and *sādhana*), for the jar is both "eternal and non-eternal" and "an existence."

(4) Kapila is not *omniscient* (major term), because he is not a *propounder of the four noble truths* (middle term): whoever is omniscient is the propounder of the four noble truths, as *Buddha* (the heterogeneous example).

Here the example involves in the heterogeneous form a doubt as to the validity of the major term (*sādhya*), for it is doubtful whether Buddha was omniscient.

(5) This person is *untrustworthy* (major term), because he is *full of passions* (middle term): whoever is trustworthy is not full of passions, as *Buddha* (heterogeneous example).

Here the example involves doubt as to the validity of the



middle term (*hetu*), for it is doubtful whether Buddha is not full of passions.

(6) Kapila is not devoid of *passions* (major term), because he did not give his own flesh to the hungry (middle term): whoever is devoid of passions did give his own flesh to the hungry, as *Buddha* (heterogeneous example).

Here the example involves doubt as to the validity of both the major and middle terms (*sādhya* and *sādhana*), for it is doubtful whether Buddha was devoid of passions and gave his own flesh to the hungry.

It is stated in the *Nyāyāvātāra-vivṛti* that some unnecessarily lay down three other kinds of fallacy of the heterogeneous example (*Vaidharmyadrśāntābhāsa*), viz.—

(1) Unseparated (*Avyatirekī*): This person is not devoid of *passions* (major term), because he is a *speaker* (middle term): whoever is devoid of passions is not a speaker, as a *piece of stone* (heterogeneous example).

Here though a piece of stone is both "devoid of passions" and "not a speaker," yet there is no invariable separation (*vyatireka vyāpti*) between "devoid of passions" and "a speaker."

(2) Of separation unshown (*Apradarīṭavyatireka*):

Sound is *non-eternal* (major term), because it is *produced* (middle term): as other (example).

Here though there is an invariable separation between "produced" and "eternal," yet it has not been shown in the proper form, such as: "Whatever is non-non-eternal is not produced, e.g., ether."

(3) Of contrary separation (*Viparīta-vyatireka*):

Sound is *non-eternal* (major term), because it is produced (middle term): whatever is not produced is non-non-eternal, e.g., ether (example).

Here the example has been put in a contrary way, for the proper form should have been: Whatever is non-non-eternal is not produced, e.g., ether."

49. Refutation (*Dūṣaṇa*) is the pointing out of defects or fallacies in the statements of the opponent in any of the forms enumerated above. The semblance of a refutation (*Dūṣaṇābhāsa*) is the contrivance to allege defects where there are no defects at all.

50. The immediate effect of *Pramāṇa* (valid knowledge) is the removal of ignorance. The consequence of the transcendental perception (*Pāramārthika Pratyakṣa Pramāṇa*) is bliss and equanimity consisting in salvation (*Mokṣa* or final emancipation), while that of the other kinds of *Pramāṇa* (direct and indirect knowledge) is the facility which they afford us to choose the desirable and reject the undesirable things.

51. *Naya* is the method of comprehending things from particular

Naya or the method of comprehending things from particular standpoints. Thus we may conceive rose either as a flower possessing the attributes common to all flowers or as a thing possessing attributes which are peculiar to the rose as distinguished from other flowers. The

Naya is of seven kinds: *naigama*, *saṁgraha*, *vyavahāra*, *rjusūtra*, *śabda*, *saṁbhirūḍha*, and *evāmbhūta*.



52. Knowledge which determines the full meaning of an object through the employment, in the scriptural method, of one-sided *nayas*, is called *Syādvāda-śruta*. It is the perfect knowledge of things taken from all possible standpoints. Thus a thing may be, may not be, both may or may not be, etc., according as we take it from one or other standpoint.

The soul (*Jiva*) is the knower, the illuminator of self and non-self, doer, enjoyer, undergoes changes of condition and is self-conscious, being different from the earth, water, etc.

This system of *Pramāṇa* and *Naya*, with which all of us are familiar, and which serves to perform all practical functions, has no beginning and no end.

SIDDHASENA GAṆĪ (600 A.D.).

53. Siddhasena Gaṇī, who belonged to the *Svetāmbara* sect, was the author of a commentary on Umāsvāti's *Tattvārthadhigama-sūtra* called *Tattvārthatīkā*,¹ in which the logical principles of *Pramāṇa* (the sources of knowledge), and *Naya* (the method of comprehending things from particular standpoints) have been fully discussed. He was a pupil of Bhāsvāmin² who was a spiritual successor of Simhasūri, himself a disciple of Dinna Gaṇī. Siddhasena Gaṇī³ is generally believed to have been a contemporary of Devardhigaṇī Kṣamāśramaṇa, who flourished 980 years after Mahāvira, or about 453 A.D. But as he has in his *Tattvārthatīkā* quoted Siddhasena Divākara and was posterior to Simhagiri or Simhasūri, a contemporary of Vikramāditya, I am inclined to suppose that he lived after 533 A.D., or about 600 A.D.

SAMANTABHADRA (600 A.D.).

54. Samantabhadra, who belonged to the *Digambara* sect of Southern India, was the famous author of a well-known com-

¹ A palm-leaf manuscript of the *Tattvārthatīkā* in the temple of Sāntinātha, Cambay, has been noticed by Peterson in his 3rd Report, pp. 83-86.

² तत्त्वादर्शजोऽयम् सत्त्वाग्रमशेषुषीकवज्जगत् ।

तत्त्वार्थशास्त्रटीकाभिर्मा व्यधात् सिद्धसेनगणः ॥ ७

(*Tattvārthatīkā*, noticed in Peterson's 3rd Report, p. 85.)

³ Simhasūri is identified by Peterson with Simhagiri who was a contemporary of Vikramāditya.

(Peterson's 4th Report, pp. cxxxi and cxxviii.)

Muni Dharmavijaya and his pupil Indra-vijaya tell me that Siddhasena Gaṇī was a contemporary of Devardhigaṇī Kṣamāśramaṇa.



mentary on Umāsvāti's Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra called Gandha-hasti-mahābhāṣya. The introductory part of this commentary is called Devāgamastotra¹ or Āptamīmāṃsā, and is replete with discussions of logical principles besides a review of the contemporary schools of philosophy including the Advaita Vāda.² The Āptamīmāṃsā has been cited by the Hindu philosopher Vācaspati Miśra³ in explaining Śaṅkarācārya's criticism of the Syādvāda doctrine in the Vedānta-sūtra.

55. Samantabhadra, who was styled a Kavi and whose works were commented on by Vidyānanda⁴ and Prabhācandra, was also the author of the Yuktyanuśāsana, the Ratnakaraṇḍaka (also called Upāsakādhyaṇa), the Svayambhū-stotra, and the Caturvīm-

who flourished 980 years after the *nirvāṇa* of Mahāvīra. Vide also Uvā-sagadassāo edited by A. F. R. Hoernle, Appendix III, page 50.

¹ In the Pāṇḍavapurāṇa he is extolled as the author of the Devāgamastotra :—

समन्तभद्रो भद्रार्थी भातु भारतभूषणः

देवागमेन येनात्र यत्को देवागमः कृतः ॥

(Pāṇḍavapurāṇa, noticed in Peterson's 4th Report, p. 157.)

२ अदेतेकान्तपक्षेऽपि इहो भेदो विवक्ष्यते ।

कारकाणां त्रयायाश्च नेकं स्रस्मान् प्रजायते ॥ २४ ॥

(Āptamīmāṃsā, verse 24.)

³ Vācaspati Miśra in his Bhāmatī-ṭīkā on Śaṅkara's exposition of the Vedānta Sūtra 2-2-33 quotes the following verse :—

स्याद्वादः सर्वथेकान्तत्यागात् किं दृष्टचिदिधेः ।

सप्रभङ्गनयापेक्षो ज्ञेयादेयविशेषकः ॥

(Bhāmatī, Bibliotheca Indica, p. 458.)

The same verse occurs in the Āptamīmāṃsā as follows :—

स्याद्वादः सर्वथेकान्तत्यागात् किं दृष्टचिदिधेः ।

सप्रभङ्गनयापेक्ष ज्ञेयादेय विशेषकः ॥ १०४ ॥

(MSS. of the Āptamīmāṃsā, verse 104, borrowed from Mr. Jain Vaidya of Jaipur.)

Vidyānanda at the closing part of his commentary on the Āptamīmāṃsā (called Āpta-mīmāṃsāśāṅkṛti-ṭīkā aṣṭasāhasrī) refers to Samantabhadra thus :—

येनाशेषकुनीतिदृष्टिसरितः प्रेक्षावतां शोषिताः

सदाशेषकलङ्कनोतिवचिरास्रज्जायेमायेयुतः ।

स बोधामि समन्तभद्र यतिभट्टं सूयाद् विभुर्भानुमान्

विद्यानन्दफलप्रदोऽनघधियां सादादमार्गायणीः ॥

(Folio 218, Āptamīmāṃsāśāṅkṛti-ṭīkā, Govt. Collection, in the Asiatic Society of Bengal, No. 1525.)



śati-jina-stuti. He is mentioned by Jina Sena in the Ādipurāṇa composed about 838 A.D., and is referred to by the Hindu philosopher Kumārila.¹ Kumārila, a contemporary of the Buddhist logician Dharmakīrti, is generally held to have lived in the 7th century A.D. Samantabhadra is supposed to have flourished about 600 A.D.

56. The Āpta-mīmāṃsā consists of 115 stanzas in Sanskrit, divided into ten chapters called *Paricehedaś*, in the course of which a full exposition of the seven parts of the *Syād-vāda* or *Sapta-bhāgī-naya* has been given. The first and second parts of the doctrine, viz., *Syād-asti* ("may be, it is"), and *Syād-nāsti* ("may be, it is not"), have led to most interesting discussion of the relation between *asti*, that is, *bhāva* or existence, and *nāsti*, that is, *abhāva* or non-existence.

57. Non-existence (*Abhāva*) is divided into four kinds : (1) antecedent non-existence (*prāgabhāva*), e.g., a lump of clay becomes non-existent as soon as a jar is made out of it, so the jar is an antecedent non-existence with reference to the lump of clay ; (2) subsequent non-existence (*pradhvaṃsābhāva*), e.g., the lump of clay is a subsequent non-existence with reference to the jar ; (3) mutual non-existence (*anyonyābhāva* or *anyāpoha*), e.g., a jar and a post are mutually non-existent with reference to each other ; and (4) absolute non-existence (*samavāyābhāva* or *atyantābhāva*), e.g., the inanimate is not a living object. It is observed² that on the supposition of mere existence to the entire exclusion of non-existence, things become all-pervading, beginningless, endless, indistinguishable and inconceivable. For

Prabhācandra in his commentary on the Ratnakaraṇḍaka (or Upāśakādhyaṇa) observes :—

येनाज्ञानतमो विनाश निश्चितं भव्याद्यचेतोमनं
सम्यग्ज्ञानमहाशुभिः प्रकटितः सागरमार्गोऽखिलः ।
स श्रीरत्नकरश्चकामलरविः संस्तुरिच्छोपको
जोयादेव समन्तभद्रमुनिपः श्रीमत्प्रभेन्दुर्जिनः ॥

(Upāśakādhyaṇa with the commentary of Prabhācandra noticed in Peterson's 4th Report, pp. 137-38.)

¹ Vide Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's Report on Sanskrit MSS. during 1883-84, p. 118, and J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, p. 227.

² भावैकानो पदार्थानामभावाणामपञ्चवात् ।
सर्वात्मकमनाद्यन्तमस्वरूपमभावकम् ॥ ८ ॥
कार्यद्रव्यमनादि स्यात् प्रागभावस्य निञ्जरे ।
प्रध्वंसस्य च ध्वंसस्य प्रत्ययेऽनन्ततां व्रजेत् ॥ १० ॥
सर्वात्मकं तदेकं स्यादन्यापीत्यतिशये ।
अन्यत्र समवायेन व्यपदेश्येत सर्वथा ॥ ११ ॥



instance, if the antecedent non-existence is denied, action and substance are to be supposed as beginningless, while on the denial of the subsequent non-existence, they become endless, and in the absence of mutual non-existence they become one and all-pervading, while on absolute non-existence being denied they are to be supposed as existing always and everywhere.

58. In the same way on the supposition of mere non-existence to the entire exclusion of existence, it becomes impossible to establish or reject anything (since it is non-existent). If on the other hand existence and non-existence, which are incompatible with each other, are simultaneously ascribed to a thing, it becomes indescribable. Therefore the truth is as follows :—

- (1) A thing *is* existent—from a certain point of view.
- (2) It *is non-existent*—from another point of view.
- (3) It is *both* existent and non-existent *in turn*—from a third point of view.
- (4) It is *indescribable* (that is, both existent and non-existent simultaneously)—from a fourth point of view.
- (5) It *is* existent and *indescribable*—from a fifth point of view.
- (6) It *is non-existent* and *indescribable*—from a sixth point of view.
- (7) It *is both* existent and non-existent and *indescribable*—from a seventh point of view.

AKALAṆKADEVA (ABOUT 750 A.D.).

59. Akalaṅka, otherwise known as Akalaṅkadeva or Akalaṅkacandra, was a famous logician who belonged to the Digambara sect. He was designated as a *Kavi*¹ (poet)—a title of special honour given to writers of repute. He wrote a commentary on Samantabhadra's *Āptamīmāṃsā* called *Aṣṭa śatī*² which is a

अभावेकान्तपक्षेऽपि भावापन्धववादिनाम् ।
 अवोधवाक्यप्रमाणं न केन साधनदूषणम् ॥ १९ ॥
 विरोधान्नोभयैकाग्र्यं स्याद्वादन्याय विदिषाम् ।
 अवाच्यतैकान्तोऽप्यक्तिर्नावाच्यमिति युज्यते ॥ २० ॥
 कथंचित् सदेवेष्टं कथंचिदसदेव तत् ।
 तथैवमवधार्य च उपयोगाच्च सर्वथा ॥ २१ ॥

(*Āptamīmāṃsā*, MSS., verses 9-14,
 lent to me by Mr. Jain Vaidya
 of Jaipur.)

¹ For an explanation of the term "Kavi" vide R. G. Bhandarkar's Report on Sanskrit MSS. during 1883-84, page 122.

² A manuscript of the *Aṣṭa-śatī* was kindly supplied to me by Mr. Jain Vaidya of Jaipur early in 1907.



most precious work on the Jaina philosophy dealing mainly with logic. Mānikyanandi's Parīkṣāmukha-sūtra (q.v.) was based on another work on logic, called Nyāya-viniścaya, written by Akalaṅka, to whom the following works are also attributed: Laghiyastraya, Akalaṅka-stotra, Svarūpa-sambodhana and Prāyaścitta. Laghusamantabhadra¹ in his Aṣṭa-sāhasri-viṣama-pada-tātparyā-ṭīkā calls Akalaṅka as *Sakala-tārkika-cakra-cūḍa-maṇi* or "the crest-gem of all logicians."

60. In the Pāṇḍava-purāṇa² reference is made to a legend according to which Akalaṅka was embarrassed in a controversy with a Buddhist antagonist. Finding that the antagonist was effectively prompted by Māyādevī concealed in a jar, Akalaṅka is said to have put an end to that prompting or inspiration by kicking the jar over with his foot.

61. Akalaṅka, though mentioned along with Dharmakīrti³ as a logician, flourished at a considerably later time. He is held to have been a contemporary of Rāṣṭrakūṭa king Subhatuṅga⁴ or Kṛṣṇarāja I. As Kṛṣṇa-rāja's son, Govind II, lived in Śaka 705⁵ or 783 A.D., Kṛṣṇa-rāja I, and consequently his contemporary Akalaṅka, must have flourished about 750 A.D.

VIDYĀNANDA (ABOUT 800 A.D.).

62. Vidyānanda, mentioned by the Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya,⁶ was a Digambara logician of Pāṭaliputra. He was the author of the Āpta-mīmāṃsālaṅkāṭī, otherwise called Aṣṭasāhasrī, an exhaustive sub-commentary on the Āpta.

¹ Vide Aṣṭasāhasrī-viṣamapada-tātparyāṭīkā by Laghusamanta-bhadra, noticed by Peterson in his 5th Report, p. 217.

² अकलङ्कोऽकलङ्कः स कलौ कलयतु दुतम् ।

पादेन ताडिता येन मायादेवौ घटस्थिता ॥

(Pāṇḍavapurāṇa, noticed by Peterson in his 4th Report, p. 157.)

³ वाचकमुष्णविरचितानि सकलशास्त्रचूडामणिभूतानि तन्मायं सुखाशीति यद्येवमकलङ्कधर्मकौर्क्ष्यादिवत् प्रकरणमेव किं नारभ्यते किमनया सूत्रकारत्वाद्योपश्रियक्या ।

(Pramāṇa-mīmāṃsā, by Hemacandra, noticed by Peterson in his 5th Report, p. 148.)

⁴ Vide K. B. Pathak's article on "Bhartṛhari and Kumārila" in the Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society, Vol. XVIII, 1892.

⁵ Vide R. G. Bhandarkar's "Early History of the Deccan," 2nd edition, p. 78.

⁶ Vide the chapter on the Jaina system in the Sarvadarśana-saṁgraha translated by Cowell and Gough, p. 56.



mīmāṃsā, containing an elaborate exposition of various logical principles. Vidyānanda, in the opening and the closing lines of his *Aṣṭasāhasrī*,¹ makes an indirect reference to Samantabhadra and Akalaṅka respectively, while in chapter X of the work he distinctly says that he followed the *Aṣṭasāti* of Akalaṅka in explaining the *Āptamīmāṃsā*. Another logical treatise called *Pramāṇa-parīkṣā* is also attributed to him. He was also the author of the *S'loka-vārtika* and *Āpta-parīkṣā*.

63. He has, in his *Aṣṭasāhasrī*, criticised the doctrines of the Sāṃkhya, Yoga, Vaiśeṣika, Advaita, Mīmāṃsaka and Saugata, Tāthāgata or Bauddha philosophy; and has also mentioned Dignāga, Udyotakara, Dharmakīrti,² Prajñākara,³ Bhartṛhari,⁴ Śabarāsvāmi, Prabhākara and Kumārila. Vidyānanda was

1 The opening lines of the *Aṣṭa-sāhasrī* are :—

श्रीवर्जमानमभिवन्द्य समन्तभद्रमुद्भूतबोधमहिमानमनिन्द्यवाचम् ।
शास्त्रावताररचितस्तुतिगोचराग्रमौमांसितं कृतिरलंक्रियते मयास्य ॥ १ ॥

The closing lines of the *Aṣṭasāhasrī* are :—

श्रीमदकलङ्कशशधरकुल विद्यानन्दसंज्ञया भूयात् ।
गद्यमौमांसालंकृतिरहसादृशौ सताम्यहो ॥

The lines in Chapter X referred to run thus :—

श्रीमदकलङ्कविहतां समन्तभद्रोक्तिमव संक्षेपात् ।
परमागमार्थविषयमहसादृशौ प्रकाशयति ॥

(*Aṣṭasāhasrī*, MSS., Asiatic Society of Bengal.)

2 यदुक्तं धर्मकोक्तिना :—

अतद्रूप पराहत वस्तुमात्रं प्रवेदनात् ।
सामान्यविषयस्योक्तं लिङ्गशब्देदाप्रतिष्ठितेः ।

(Quoted in *Aṣṭasāhasrī*, chap. I.)

अर्थोपयोगेऽपि पुनः स्मार्तं शब्दानुयोजनम् ।
अलक्षणीयपेक्षेत सोऽर्थो व्यवहितो भवेत् ।

(Quoted in *Aṣṭasāhasrī*, chap. I.)

प्रज्ञाकरस्येदं वचः :—

क्रमप्रतीतेरेवं स्यात् प्रथमभावना गतिः ।
तत्त्वामर्थ्यात् पुनः पश्चाद् यतः कर्ता प्रतीयते ॥

(Quoted in *Aṣṭasāhasrī*, chap. I.)

न सोऽस्ति प्रत्ययो लोके यः शब्दानुममाहते ।
अनविज्ञमिवाभाति सर्थं शब्दे प्रतिष्ठितम् ॥

(This verse of Vākyapadīya by Bhartṛhari is quoted in the *Aṣṭasāhasrī*, vide J.B.B.R.A.S. for 1892, p. 221.)



otherwise named Pātra Kesari or Pātra Kesari Svāmi who has been praised by Jina Sena in the Ādi Purāṇa¹ composed about Śaka 760² or A.D. 838. He is believed to have lived early in the 9th century A.D.³ at Pāṭaliputra.⁴

MĀṆIKYA NANDI (ABOUT 800 A.D.).

64. Māṇikya Nandi was a Digambara author, whose Parikṣā-mukha-śāstra⁵ or Parikṣā-mukha-sūtra is a standard work on the Jaina logic. As his work is based on that of Akalaṅka,⁶ he must have lived after 750 A.D. The earliest commentary on the Parikṣā-mukha-śāstra is the Prameya-kamala-mārtanḍa of Prabhācandra. Vidyānanda, Māṇikya Nandi and Prabhācandra have been pronounced to be contemporaries.⁷ So Māṇikya Nandi seems to have lived about 800 A.D.

65. The Parikṣā-mukha-sūtra is divided into six chapters thus: (1) the characteristic of valid knowledge (*Pramāṇa-svarūpa*); (2) direct apprehension or perception (*Pratyakṣa*); (3) indirect apprehension (*Parokṣa*); (4) the object of valid knowledge (*Viśaya*); (5) the result of valid knowledge (*Phala*); (6) the semblances or fallacies (*Ābhāsa*).

१ भट्टाकलंक दीपाल पात्रकेसरिणां गुणाः ।

विदुषां हृदयारुद्धा शारयन्नेतिनिर्मलाः ॥ ५२ ॥

(Ādīpurāṇa, quoted by Mr. K. B. Pathak, J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, p. 222.)

Mr. Pathak has quoted Samyaktvaprakāśa to show that Vidyānanda and Pātrakesari were identical:—

तथा श्लोकवार्तिके विश्वामन्यपरनाम पात्रकेसरिस्वामिना यदुक्तं तच्च लिख्यते तच्चाद्यं चदानं सम्यग्दर्शनम् ।

(J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, pp. 222, 223.)

२.३ Vide K. B. Pathak's article on Bhartṛhari and Kumārila in J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, pp. 227, 229.

४ Vide Brahma-nemidatta's Kathākoṣa, life of Pātrakesari alias Vidyānanda.

५ A manuscript of the Parikṣā-mukha-śāstra was kindly lent to me by Mr. Jain Vaidya of Jaipur (Rajputana), and subsequently another manuscript of the work was procured from the Deccan College, Poona.

६ Peterson in his 4th Report, p. 155, notices Parikṣā-mukhaṁ saṭikam. The Tīkā is the Prameya-ratna-mālā or Parikṣā-mukha-pañjikā of Ananta-vīrya, which opens thus:

अकलङ्कवचोऽशोभेदद्वये येन धीमता ।

न्यायविद्यासूतं तस्मै नमो माणिक्यनन्दिने ॥ १ ॥

१ Vide K. B. Pathak's article on Bhartṛhari and Kumārila in J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, pp. 219, 220, 221. Mr. Pathak says that Māṇikya Nandi has mentioned Vidyānanda, but in the text of the Parikṣā-mukha-śāstra itself I have not come across any such mention.



66. *Pramāṇa*, valid knowledge, is defined as the knowledge

Valid knowledge.

which ascertains the nature of what was uncertain to one's self. It generally arises in the form : " I know the jar by myself," which consists of a subject, an object, an act, and an instrument. Just as a lamp illumines itself as well as the surrounding objects, so the *Pramāṇa* sets forth the knower as well as the thing known.

67. *Pramāṇa* is of two kinds : (1) direct knowledge (*Pratyakṣa*) which arises through the senses, etc., and (2) indirect knowledge (*Parokṣa*) consisting of recollection (*Smṛti*), recognition (*Pratyabhijñāna*), argumentation (*Tarka* or *Ūha*), inference (*Anumāna*), and the scripture (*Āgama*). Recollection is a knowledge

Kinds of valid knowledge.

of the form " that " which arises through the awaking of impressions, thus : " that Devadatta." Recognition is a knowledge which arises from perception through recollection in the forms, " this is that," " this is like that," " this is different from that," " this is the counterpart of that," etc., thus : " this is that Devadatta," " the *boś gavaeus* is like the cow," " the buffalo is different from the cow," " this is far from that," " this is a tree," etc. Argumentation is a knowledge of the connection between the middle term and the major term based on the presence or absence of the latter, in the form, " if this is, that is, if this is not, that is not," thus smoke arises only if there is fire, but it cannot arise if there is no fire. Inference¹ is the knowledge of the major term arising through the middle term : there is fire here because there is smoke.

68. Pervasion² or inseparable connection (*Vyāpti* or *Avinābhāva*) is the universal attendance of the

Terms of a Syllogism.

middle term by the major term in simultaneity or succession : thus fire and smoke may abide simultaneously or the latter may follow the former.

If the middle term and the major term exist simultaneously, the former is called *vyāpya*, pervaded or contained, and the latter *vyāpaka*, pervader or container.

But if the middle term follows the major term, the former is called effect (*kārya*), and the latter cause (*kāraṇa* or *hetu*), thus fire is the cause of smoke. Ordinarily, however, the major term is called *sādhya* or that which is to be proved, and the middle term is called *sādhana* or that by which it is to be proved. Sometimes the major term is also called *dharma* or predicate, and the middle term *liṅga*, mark or sign.

The minor term is called *Pakṣa*, the place or locus in which the major term abides, or *Dharmin*, the subject, thus : " this

¹ साधनात् साध्यविज्ञानमनुमानम् ॥ ८ ॥ (Parīkṣā-mukha-sūtra).

² सप्तक्रमभावनिश्चयोऽविनाभावः ॥ ११ ॥ (Parīkṣā-mukha-sūtra).



place is fiery"; "sound is mutable": here "this place" and "sound" are the minor terms. Some philosophers, who divide the middle term (reason) into three phases, dispense with the minor term in an inference.

The middle term (*Hetu*) is defined as that which is inseparably connected with the major term, or in other words, which cannot come into existence unless the major term exists. For instance, smoke could not come into existence unless the fire existed.

69. The middle term or reason (*Hetu*) is divided as (1) perceptible (*upalabdhi*), and (2) imperceptible (*anupalabdhi*). Each of these again may occur in the form of an affirmation (*Vidhi*) or negation (*pratiṣedha*).

70. The perceptible reason in the affirmative form admits of six subdivisions according as it is:—

- (i) the pervaded (*vyāpya*)—sound is mutable because it is factitious;
- (ii) an effect (*kārya*)—this man has got intellect because there are (intellectual) functions in him;
- (iii) a cause (*kāraṇa*)—there is a shadow here because there is an umbrella;
- (iv) prior (*pūrva*)—the Rohiṇī stars will rise for the Kṛttikās have risen.
- (v) posterior (*uttara*)—the Bharanī stars certainly rose for the Kṛttikās have risen;
- (vi) simultaneous (*sahacara*)—the man had a mother for he had a father; or this mango has a particular colour because it has a particular flavour.

71. The perceptible reason in the negative form admits of six subdivisions as follows:—

- (i) the pervaded (*vyāpya*)—there is no cold sensation because of heat;
- (ii) an effect (*kārya*)—there is no cold sensation because of smoke;
- (iii) a cause (*kāraṇa*)—there is no happiness in this man because of the shaft in his heart;
- (iv) prior (*pūrva*)—the Rohiṇī stars will not rise at once for the Revatī [only] has risen.
- (v) posterior (*uttara*)—the Bharanī did not rise a moment ago for the Puṣyā has risen.
- (vi) simultaneous (*sahacara*)—there is no doubt of the existence of the other side of this wall for this side of it is perceived.



72. The *imperceptible* reason in the *negative* form admits of seven subdivisions as follows :—

- (i) identity (*svabhāva*)—there is no jar here because it is imperceptible ;
- (ii) the pervaded (*vyāpya*)—there is no *Śimśapā* here because there is no tree at all ;
- (iii) an effect (*kārya*)—there is no smouldering fire here because there is no smoke ;
- (iv) a cause (*kāraṇa*)—there is no smoke here because there is no fire ;
- (v) prior (*pūrva*)—the *Rohiṇī* stars will not rise in a moment for the *Kṛttikās* are not perceptible ;
- (vi) posterior (*uttara*)—the *Bharaṇī* did not rise a moment ago for the *Kṛttikās* are not perceptible ;
- (vii) simultaneous (*sahacara*)—in this even balance there is no bending upwards because it is not perceptible.

73. The *imperceptible* reason in the *affirmative* form admits of three subdivisions thus :—

- (i) an effect (*kārya*)—in this man there is some disease because there is no healthy movement in him ;
- (ii) a cause (*kāraṇa*)—this man is sorrowful because he has no union with his beloved ones ;
- (iii) identity (*svabhāva*)—there is uncertainty here because certainty is not discernible ;

73. The middle term and the major term are the parts of an inference, but the example (*udāharaṇa*)

Example.

is not. Nevertheless for the sake of explaining matters to men of small intellect, the example (*udāharaṇa* or *dṛṣṭānta*), nay, even the application (*upanaya*) and the conclusion (*nigamana*) are admitted as parts of an inference. The example is of two kinds : (1) the affirmative or homogeneous (*anvayī* or *sādharmya*) which shows the middle term as covered by the major term, such as : wherever there is smoke, there is fire, as in a *kitchen* ; and (2) the negative or heterogeneous (*vyatireki* or *vaidharmya*) by which the absence of the middle term is indicated by the absence of the major term, e.g., wherever there is no fire, there is no smoke, as in a *lake*.

74. Inference is of two kinds, viz., (1) inference for one's own self (*svārthānumāna*), and (2) inference for the sake of others (*parārthānumāna*).

Inference.

An instance of the latter kind of inference is given below :—

- (1) Sound (minor term) is mutable (major term)—proposition ;
- (2) because it is factitious (reason or middle term) ;



- (3) whatever is factitious is mutable, as a jar (affirmative or homogeneous example) ;
- (4) sound is factitious (application) ;
- (5) therefore sound is mutable (conclusion).

Or

- (3) whatever is not mutable is not factitious, as the milk of a barren woman's breast (negative or heterogeneous example) ;
- (4) but sound is factitious (application) ;
- (5) therefore sound is mutable (conclusion).

75. Testimony (*Āgama*) is a knowledge of objects derived from the words of reliable persons or scripture in virtue of their natural fitness

Verbal Testimony. or suggestiveness—*e.g.*, the north pole exists.

76. Objects of valid knowledge are either general (*sāmānya*) or particular (*viśeṣa*). The general is of two kinds : (1) homogeneous (*tīryak*), including many individuals of like nature as, the "cow" is a general notion which signifies many individual cows as Sabalā, Khamba, Mumbha, etc. ; and (2) heterogeneous (*ūrdhvatā*), including many individuals of dissimilar nature, as, "gold" is a general notion comprising a bracelet, necklace, ear-ring, etc. The particular is also of two kinds : (1) relating to things (*vyatireka*), *e.g.*, cow, buffalo, elephant, dog, are four particular things distinguished from one another ; and (2) relating to action such as pleasure, pain, etc., experienced by the soul.

77. The result or consequence of valid knowledge is the cessation of ignorance enabling one to choose the desirable and reject the undesirable.

78. Fallacy or semblance consists of the knowledge of that which is different from the real thing. Various kinds of Fallacies. It is of many kinds, such as the fallacy—

- (1) of perception (*pratyakṣābhāsa*), *e.g.*—to mistake a post for a man ;
- (2) of recollection (*smaraṇābhāsa*)—in trying to recollect Jinadatta to say : " O, that Devadatta " ;
- (3) of recognition (*pratyabhijñānābhāsa*)—on seeing a greyhound to say : " this is a tiger " ;
- (4) of argumentation (*tarkābhāsa*)—" whoever is his son must be black " ;
- (5) of the minor term (*pakṣābhāsa*)—" sound is impermanent " : This is a fallacy of the minor term according to the Mimāṃsakas, for they do not attribute



impermanency to sound; or fire is not hot because it is a substance as water;

- (6) of the middle term or reason (*hetvābhāsa*)—sound is eternal because it is factitious;
- (7) of example (*dr̥ṣṭāntābhāsa*)—sound is eternal because it is corporeal, like a jar;
- (8) of verbal testimony (*āgamābhāsa*)—"there is a heap of sweetmeats on the side of the river, run you boys"; "there are a hundred elephants on his finger"; "the Jains are allowed to eat in the night" [as a fact they are not so allowed according to their scripture].

79. Māṇikya Nandi in the *Parikṣāmukha-sūtra* (chapter vi, aph.

References to contem- 56-57) has mentioned the *Laukāyatika*,
poraneous systems of phil- Saugata, Sāṃkhya, Yoga, Prābhākara,
osophy. Jaiminiya, etc. In the 3rd chapter of
the work he has alluded to—"a certain philosopher who
maintaining three phases of the reason or middle term (*hetu*)
dispenses with the minor term (*pakṣa*)."¹

80. He concludes his work by referring to it as a mirror through which a man can see what is to be accepted and what rejected.²

PRABHĀ CANDRA (ABOUT 825 A.D.).

81. Prabhā Candra styled a *Kavi*, a member of the Digambara sect, was the author of the famous logical treatise called the *Prameya-kamala-mārtaṇḍa*, the earliest commentary on the *Parikṣāmukha-sūtra* of Māṇikya Nandi. He was also the author of the *Nyāya-kumuda-candrodaya* (or briefly *Candrodaya*), a commentary on the *Laghiyastraya* of Akalaṅka. He has in his *Prameya-kamala-mārtaṇḍa* mentioned Bhagavān Upavarṣa,

¹ साध्याविनाभावित्वेन निश्चितो हेतुः ॥ १० ॥

को वा विधा हेतुमुक्ता समर्थयमानो न पश्यति ॥ ११ ॥

(*Parikṣāmukha-sūtra*, MSS. lent to me by Mr. Jain Vaidya of Jaipur).

² परीक्षासुखमादर्शं हेतोपादेयतत्त्वयोः ।

संविदे माहयो बालः परीक्षादलवद् व्यथाम् ॥

(*Parikṣāmukha-sūtra*, chap. VI, MSS. lent to me by Mr. Jain Vaidya of Jaipur).



Sabarasvāmi, Bhartṛhari, Bāṇa,¹ Kumārila,² Prabhākara, Dig-nāga, Udyotakara Dharmakīrti, Vidyānanda and others. He himself has been mentioned by Jina Sena in the Ādi Purāṇa³ composed about Saka 760 or A.D. 838. Prabhā Candra, as a contemporary of Maṇikyā Nandi and Vidyānanda, is believed to have lived in the first half of the 9th century A.D.

MALLAVĀDIN (ABOUT 827 A.D.).

82. He belonged to the Śvetāmbara sect and was the famous author of a commentary on the Buddhist logical treatise Nyāya-binduṭīkā called Dharmottara-ṭippanaka. According to a Jaina legend,⁴ Malla was the son of King Silāditya's sister. He was called *vādin* or logician, because, having vanquished the Buddhists in a dispute, he re-established the Jaina faith and brought to its former glory the great figure of Ādinātha on Mount Satruñjaya (in Kathiwar).

83. A palm-leaf manuscript⁵ of the Dharmottara-ṭippanaka

¹ Prabhā Candra has quoted the following verse from Bāṇa's Kādambarī:—

रजोजले जम्बानि सल्लहयि
स्थितौ प्रजानां प्रलये तमःसुग्रे ।
अजाय समंस्थिति-नाश-हेतवे
अयमयाय चिगयात्मने नमः ॥

(Prameya-kamala-mārtanda, Deccan College, MSS., p. 21a, quoted by Mr. K. B. Pathak in J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, p. 221.)

² Prabhā Candra refers to Kumārila otherwise called Bhaṭṭa thus:—

तथा अर्थापत्तिरपि प्रमाणात्करं तल्लक्षणं अर्थापत्तिरपि दृष्टः कुतो वा अर्थोऽन्यथा
नोपपद्यते इत्युद्वाहकल्पना, कुमारिलोऽपि एतदेव भाष्यकारवचो व्याचष्टे ।

(Prameya-kamala-mārtanda, quoted by Mr. K. B. Pathak in the J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, p. 227).

³ In the Ādi Purāṇa Prabhā Candra is thus mentioned:—

चन्द्रांशुधयशसं प्रभाचन्द्रं कविं कुवे ।
छन्ना चन्द्रोदयं येन शब्दास्त्रादिर्न जगत् ॥ १७ ॥

(Quoted by Mr. K. B. Pathak in J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, p. 222.)

On p. 227 of the same journal the date of the Ādipurāṇa is fixed at Saka 760 or 838 A.D.

⁴ Peterson 4, pp. 3-4, in which is mentioned the legend from the Prabandhacintāmaṇi (Rāmacandra's edition, Bombay, p. 273).

⁵ इति धर्मोत्तरटिप्पणके श्रीमल्लवाद्याचार्य्यछते द्वितीयः परिच्छेदः समाप्तः महर्षे
महाशयैः ॥



is preserved at Anhilwad Patan and is said to be dated Samvat 1231 or 1174 A.D. According to the *Prabhāvaka-caritra*¹ Mallavādin was also the author of a *Padmacaritra* and lived in Vira Samvat 884 or 357 A.D. But this is impossible as Dharmottara (q.v.), on whose *Nyāyabinduṭīkā* Mallavādin wrote *Tippanaka*, lived about 837 A.D. On the other hand Mallavādin is mentioned² by Hem Candra Sūri who lived during 1088—1172 A.D. It seems therefore probable that the year 884 in which Mallavādin lived does not refer to Vira Samvat, but to Vikrama Samvat. On that supposition Mallavādin lived in 827 A.D. and was a contemporary of Dharmottara.

PRADYUMNA SŪRI (ABOUT 980 A.D.).

84. He³ belonged to the Rājagaccha of the Śvetāmbara sect. In Māṇikyacandra's *Parīvanātha-caritra*,⁴ his prowess in logical discussions is referred to in the following terms:—

“There was born the preceptor Pradyumna Sūri—the first healer of disease of the world—who entirely removed all corruptions from the body of men (or detected all defects in disputation committed by men) and who, using sharp logical expressions, made his irrelevant opponents to sweat and thereby to be cured of the fever of pride.”

संवत् १२३१ वर्षे भाद्रपद शुदि १२ रवौ अद्योह अंबावलिषाम वास्तव्य च०
दाहदुसुतय० चाहदेन धर्माय धर्मांतर दिप्यनकं लिखापितम् ॥

(Noticed in Peterson 5. App. p. 3.)

¹ *Vide* Klatt, Vienna Oriental Journal, Vol. IV, p. 67.

² अनु मल्लवादिनं तार्किकाः ।

तस्मादन्ये शोना इत्यर्थः ॥

(Siddha Hema Sabdānuśāsana Bṛhat
Tīkā, 2-2-39).

³ For further particulars about Pradyumna Sūri see Peterson's 4th Report, p. lxxix.

* पुंसां विपश्चर्जं विकारमच्छिन्नं निशूलमुन्मूलय-
क्षवायः समभूदु भवामयभिषक् प्रद्युम्नस्त्रिगुणः ।
येन स्नेहयता प्रयुज्य तरलां तर्काञ्जलां भारतीं
वादीन्द्राः प्रविलापिनो घनतरं दर्पणं त्याजिताः ॥ ४ ॥
दिग्गम्बरसमाक्रान्तवेङ्कपट्टं समाददे ।
यः प्रत्यक्षं नरेन्द्रस्य जगतस्तद्वयः पुनः ॥ ५ ॥
मौरागतानिधो राजगण्डभूगुणवारिधिः ।
स्त्रिः प्रद्युम्नस्त्रिगुणः पूर्वं वः पूर्वजोऽभवत् ॥ ६ ॥



85. In the same work reference is made to his victory over the Digambaras of Veṅkaṭa in the presence of the king of that province. He delighted the kings of various countries by no fewer than eighty-four triumphs in discussion. He was eleventh in ascent from Māṇikyācandra Sūri, who wrote his Pārśvanātha-caritra in Samvat 1276 or 1219 A.D. Pradyumna must have flourished about 980 A.D., for he was the preceptor of Abhayadeva Sūri (q.v.) who lived a little before 1039 A.D.

ABHAYADEVA SŪRI (ABOUT 1000 A.D.).

86. Abhayadeva Sūri belonged to the Svetāmbara sect¹ and was the pupil and successor of Pradyumna Sūri of the Rājagaccha. He was an eminent logician and author of Vādamahārṇava, a treatise on logic called the Ocean of Discussions, and of a commentary on the Sammatī-tarka-sūtra called Tattvārthabodha-vidhāyinī.² "He is described as a lion that roamed at ease in the wild forest of books on logic. That the rivers of various conflicting opinions might not sweep away the path of

सपादलक्ष्मोपालविभुवनगिर्यादिदेशोपालान् ।
ययुश्चतुरधिकाशैत्या वादजयैरञ्जयामास ॥ १८ ॥
त्रौचभयदेवसूरिस्तच्छिष्यस्तर्कभूरभूत् ।
भद्रासनान्तितुमुलाङ्गीयंदास्यमग्निययत् ॥ १९ ॥

(Pārśvanātha-caritra as noticed by Peterson in his 3rd Report, pp. 57-164.)

- 1 तर्कप्रत्यविचारदुर्गमवनोसहारपद्यानन-
स्तपदेभयदेवसूरिरजनि सेताम्बरधामणीः ।
सदाव्यनुतिलालसा मधुकरो कोलाहलाशङ्कनी
दिला विहरपङ्कजं शितवती प्राप्नो यदीयाननम् ॥ १ ॥
इह निम्नगाः सत्यभेदमेता
भुवं करिष्यन्ति जडैः समेताः ।
इतीव रोधाय चकार तासां
पथं नवं वादमहार्णवं यः ॥ २ ॥
विद्वन्मण्डलमौलिमण्डनमणिः प्रेङ्खलपोऽहमेषि-
निर्द्वयोऽपि जिनेश्वरा समजनि श्रीमांस्ततः सद्गुरुः ।
यः स्रुजङ्गुषपुत्रमुज्जयन्तीजिह्वोः पुरः प्रक्षिप्तान् ।
वादे वादिवरान् विजित्य विजयवीर्यसंपदं स यथात् ॥ ३ ॥

(Pārśvanātha-caritra by Māṇikyācandra noticed by Peterson in his 3rd Report, pp. 158-59.)

¹ See R. Mitra's Catalogue, X, pp. 39-40.



the good, Abhayadeva¹ wrote his Vāda-mahārṇava." He was succeeded by Jīneśvara Sūri, a contemporary of King Muṇja.² He was the ninth predecessor of Siddhasena Sūri, who wrote Pravacana-sāroddhāra-vṛtti in Samvat 1242 or 1185 A.D. It was probably this Abhayadeva Sūri, who was "world-renowned" and a teacher of Sānti Sūri³ who died in Samvat 1096 or 1039 A.D.

LAGHUSAMANTABHADRA (ABOUT 1000 A.D.).

87. He⁴ wrote a commentary on the Aṣṭasāhasri of Vidyānanda called the Aṣṭasāhasri-viśamapada-tātparya-ṭikā⁵ and seems to have belonged to the Digambara sect and lived about 1000 A.D.

ANANTA-VIRYA (ABOUT 1039 A.D.).

88. Ananta-virya was the Digambara author of a commentary on the Parikṣamukha of Māṇikyā Nandi called Parikṣā-mukha-pañjikā or Prameya-ratnamālā, as also a commentary on Akalaṅka's Nyāya-viniścaya called the Nyāya-viniścaya-vṛtti. He wrote the former for Sānti-sena at the request of Hirapa, son of Vijaya and Nāṇambā.⁶ Now Sāntisena, supposed to be identical with Sānti Sūri, died in Samvat 1096 or A.D. 1039. His contemporary Ananta-virya must, therefore, have flourished

¹ For particulars about Abhayadeva Sūri see Peterson's 4th Report, p. iii.

² Weber's Die Handschriften-verzeichnisse, etc., p. 851, vv. 1, 2, and pp. 121, vv. 4-5. Jīneśvara Sūri was probably a spiritual brother of Dhaneśvara Sūri.

यस्याभूद्गुरुरागमे गुणनिधिः श्रीमवेदेवाङ्गयः
सूरोऽभयदेव सूरिरचितपञ्चातप्रमाणेऽपि च ।
तस्येयं सुगुहयादधिगत (?) दक्षात्मविद्यागुण (?)
प्रत्याख्याय चिरं भुवि प्रचरतु श्रीगान्धिल्लः कतिः ॥

(Uttarādhyayana-bṛhadvṛtti by Sāntyācārya noticed by Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar in his Report on Sanskrit M.S. for 1883-84, p. 44.)

³ See also Weber's Die Handschriften-verzeichnisse der Königlichen Bibliothek zu Berlin, p. 827.

⁴ Vide Peterson's Sixth Report, p. xxiii.

⁵ The Aṣṭasāhasri-viśama-pada-tātparya-ṭikā has been noticed in Peterson's Fifth Report, pp. 216-219, where we read :

देवं स्वामिनममलं विद्यामन्दं प्रथम्य निजभक्त्या ।

विष्टयोम्यष्टमाचसोविषमपदं लघुसमन्तभद्रोऽहम् ॥

⁶ विलेयप्रियपुत्रस्य शौरपस्योपरोधतः ।

शान्तिवेद्यार्थमारब्धा परोक्षानुसर्पद्विका ॥ ६ ॥

(Parikṣā-mukhaṁ saṭīkam, noticed in Peterson's Fourth Report, p. 155.)



about that time.¹ Ananta-virya must have lived before the 14th century, for he is mentioned by Mādhavācārya in the chapter on Jaina darśana in the Sarvadarśana-saṁgraha.

DEVA SŪRI (1086-1169 A.D.).

89. Deva Sūri, called Vādipravara or the foremost of disputants, belonged to the Svetāmbara sect and was a pupil of Muncandra Sūri. He was the author of the well-known treatise on logic called *Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokāṅkāra* on which he himself wrote an elaborate commentary named *Syādvāda-ratnākara*.² He totally vanquished the Digambara Kumudacandrācārya in a dispute over the salvation of women [at the court of Jaya-siṃha-deva at Anahillapurapattana in N. Guzerat] and thereby practically stopped the entrance of the Digambaras into that town. The dispute³ took place in Saṁvat 1181 or 1124 A.D.

90. Ratnaprabha Sūri, a pupil of Deva Sūri, in his *Upadeśamālā-ṭīkā*,⁴ composed in Saṁvat 1238 or A.D. 1181, writes :—

“ Lord Śrī Deva Sūri, who was the crest-gem of the pupils of the esteemed Muncandra Sūri and succeeded him in his paṭṭa (sacred chair), conquered the Digambaras in the council-room of

¹ *Vide* the Indian Antiquary, Vol. XI, p. 253; and Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's Report on Sanskrit MSS. during 1883-84, p. 129.

² *स्यादादरत्नाकर इत्यस्मिन् ग्रन्थे मञ्जुतमः ।*

वादिद्वन्द्वारकश्चोमदुदेवसूरिविनिर्मितः ॥ ४ ॥

Malladhāri Rājasekhara Sūri's Pañjikā on *Syādvāda-ratnākara* vātā-
i k.

³ *चन्द्रावृत्तिवर्षेण वैशाखे पूर्णिमादिने ।*

आज्जतो वादिशालायां तो वादिप्रतिवादिनो ॥

(*Prabhāvakāśar.*, XXI, v. 35, quoted by Dr. Klatt in his article on “ Historical Records of the Jains ” in the Indian Antiquary, Vol. XI, Sept. 1882, p. 254.)

⁴ Ratnaprabha Sūri observes :—

शिष्यः श्रीमन्निचन्द्रसूरिगुरुभिर्गौतमैश्चूडामणिः

पदे स्ते विनिवेगितस्तदन्तु स श्रीदेवसूरिप्रभुः ।

आस्थाने जयसिंहदेवसूरपतेर्देनास्तदिगवासमा

स्त्रीनिर्वाणसमर्थनेन विजयस्तथाः समुत्तमिषितः ॥

तत्पदप्रभवो भवत्तु गुरुपामाभिरामोदयाः

श्रीमदेवसूरसूर्यः शुचिधियस्तन्मानसप्रोतये ।

श्रीरत्नप्रभसूरिभिः शुभकृते श्रीदेवसूरिप्रभोः

शिष्येः श्रेयसकारि सम्यक्कृते हृत्तिविशेषार्थिनाम् ॥

(*Upadeśamālāṭīkā* noticed by Peterson in his 3rd Report, p. 167.)



King Jaya-simha-deva and raised a pillar of victory by maintaining the nirvāṇa or salvation of women [that is, holding that even women are capable of attaining nirvāṇa].”

91. In Saṃvat 1204 or 1147 A.D. Deva Sūri founded a caitya, raised a bimba at Phalavardhigrāma, and established an image of Neminātha at Arāsana.¹ He was born in Saṃvat 1143 or 1086 A.D., attained the rank of Sūri in 1174 Saṃvat or 1117 A.D., and ascended to heaven in Saṃvat 1226 or 1169 A.D.²

92. The Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokāṅkāra³ consists of eight chapters (paricchedas), viz.—

Subjects of the Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokāṅkāra.

(1) Determination of the nature of valid knowledge (*pramāṇa-svarūpa-nirṇaya*); (2) determination of the

Munisundara Sūri in his Gurvāvalī composed in Saṃvat 1466 gives a similar account :—

येनादिनचतुरशीति सुवादिश्रीला-
लब्धमन्त्रमथराममदकेलिमाली ।
वादाहवे कुमुदचन्द्रदिगम्बरैन्द्रः
श्रीमिहभूमिपतिमंसदि पत्तनेऽस्मिन् ॥ ७४ ॥
स्यादादरमाकरतर्कवेधा
मुदे स केषां नहि देवसूरिः ।
यतश्चतुर्निर्गतिस्सूरिमाद्यं
यस्यैव न म्मा विदितं बभूव ॥ ७५ ॥
वेदमुनीशमितेऽब्दे
देवगुणजंगदमुनरोऽभ्युदितः ।
श्रीमुनिचन्द्रगुरोरिति
शिष्या बहवोऽभवन् विदिताः ॥ ७६ ॥

(Gurvāvalī published in the Jaina Yaśovijaya-granthamālā of Benares, pp. 18-19.)

¹ Vide Peterson's 4th Report, p. lv.; also Klatt, Ind. Ant. XI, p. 254.

² शिष्यवेदशिवे जन्म दौला युष्मदरेखरे ।
वेदाद्यग्रंकरे वर्षे सूरित्वमभवत् प्रभोः ॥
रसयुष्मदौ वर्षे आवणे मासि संमते ।
छायापलस्य सप्तम्यामपराह्णे गुरोर्दिने ॥
मन्त्रलोकास्थितं लोकं प्रतिवाद्य पुरन्दर-
बाधका इव त जगद्दिवं श्रीदेवसूरयः ॥

(Prabhāvaka, ac., XXI, vv. 287 seq., quoted by Dr. Klatt in his article on "Historical Records of the Jains" in the Indian Antiquary, Sept. 1882, Vol. XI, p. 254.) According to some authorities Deva Sūri was born in Saṃvat 1134 or 1077 A.D.

³ The Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokāṅkāra has been printed and published in Benares in the Jaina Yaśovijaya series.



nature of perception (*pratyakṣa-svarūpa-nirṇaya*); (3) determination of the nature of recollection, recognition, argumentation and inference (*smaraṇa-pratyabhijñāna-tarkānumāna-svarūpa-nirṇaya*); (4) determination of the nature of valid knowledge derived from verbal testimony or scripture (*āgamākhyā-pramāṇa-svarūpa-nirṇaya*); (5) determination of the nature of objects of knowledge (*viśaya-svarūpa-nirṇaya*); (6) determination of the consequences and semblances or fallacies of knowledge (*phala-pramāṇa-svarūpādyābhāsa-nirṇaya*); (7) determination of the nature of one-sided knowledge (*nayātma-svarūpa-nirṇaya*); and (8) determination of the right procedure of a disputant and his opponent (*vādi-prativādi-nyāya-nirṇaya*).

As this work is written on the same plan as Māṇikya Nandī's *Parīkṣāmukha-sūtra* or Akalaṅka's *Nyāya-viniścaya* as well as Siddhasena Divākara's *Nyāyāvatāra*, I shall pass over the common points, mentioning only the special features.

93. *Pramāṇa* or valid knowledge is defined here as the knowledge which ascertains the nature of itself and all other things. The intercourse

Valid knowledge. between the sense-organs and the objects of sense is not *pramāṇa* (valid knowledge), for though it can ascertain the nature of objects outside itself, it cannot ascertain its own nature, since it has no consciousness. *Pramāṇa* must certainly be knowledge, for it is capable of choosing what is desirable and rejecting what is undesirable. It must also be definite in character, for it is opposed to superimposition (*samāropa*). Superimposition is of three kinds: (1) inversion (*viparyaya*)—such as to look upon a pearl-oyster as a piece of silver; (2) doubt (*saṁśaya*)—such as: is this a post or a man? and (3) uncertainty (*anadhyavasāya*) consisting in a mere cogitation in the mind as to what the thing might be.

94. *Pramāṇa* (valid knowledge) is of two kinds: (1) direct (*pratyakṣa*) perception, and (2) indirect (*parokṣa*).

Direct knowledge.
Perception.

The direct knowledge or perception is of two kinds: practical (*sāṁvyaavahārika*) and transcendental (*pāramārthika*). The practical direct knowledge again is subdivided as that which arises through the sense-organs (*indriya-nibandhana*) and that which does not arise through the sense-organs (*anindriya-nibandhana*) but through the mind (*manas*). Each of these passes through four stages,¹ viz.: (1) *avagraha*, distinguishing the type whether it be, e.g., horse or man, but not discerning the characteristics;

¹ The explanation of *avagraha*, etc., as given here is taken from Col. Jarrett's translation of the *Ain-i-Akbari*, published by the Asiatic Society of Bengal, vol. III, p. 190, as the portion related to *pramāṇa* in the Jaina



(2) *ihā*, inquiring, e.g., whence came the man and from what country came the horse; (3) *avāya*, arriving at a correct identification of the above, and (4) *dhāraṇā*, recollecting the thing particularised and keeping it in mind.

The transcendental direct knowledge (*pāramārthika*) is that which comes exclusively from the illumination of the soul and is profitable to emancipation. It is two-fold: (1) *vikala* (defective) including *avadhi-jñāna* (limited knowledge), i.e., knowledge of special objects which, near or remote, are not differentiated, and *manah-paryāya*, i.e., definite knowledge of another's thoughts and the laying bare of the secrets of the heart; and (2) *sakala*, i.e., perfect, which is the unobstructed intuition of the entire aspects of a thing. One who possesses that perfect transcendental knowledge is called an *arhat*, i.e., one freed from all faults or obstructions.

95. Indirect knowledge (*parokṣa*) is of five kinds: viz., (1) Indirect knowledge, recollection (*smaraṇa*); (2) recognition (*pratyabhijñāna*); (3) argumentation (*tarka*); (4) inference (*anumāna*); (5) verbal testimony or the knowledge derived from the words of a reliable person or scripture (*āgama*).

96. Inference is of two kinds: (1) *svārtha*, for one's own self, and (2) *parārtha*, for the sake of others. Inference, *Hetu* (reason or the middle term) is defined as that which cannot happen except in connection with the major term. The definition that the *hetu* (middle term) is that which possesses three characteristics, is to be rejected as involving fallacies.¹ Some maintain the threefold characteristic or division of the *hetu* (reason or middle term), but do not admit the necessity of using the minor term (*pakṣa*) in an

chapter of *Ain-i-Akbari* very closely resembles that in the *Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokāṅkūra*. Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's explanation of these terms given on p. 93, footnote, of his Report on Sanskrit MSS., for 1883-84, is, however, different.

निश्चितान्यथानुपपत्तेकलक्षणे हेतुः न तु विलक्षणकादिः ।
तस्य हेतुभासस्यापि सम्भवात् ॥ ११ ॥

(*Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokāṅkūra*,
Chap. III.)

This is an attack on Dharmakīrti and other Buddhist logicians who define the three characteristics of *hetu* as follows:—

चेदप्यं पुनर्लिङ्गस्य अनुमेये सत्त्वमेव ।
सपक्ष एव सत्त्वम् । असपक्षे चासत्त्वमेव निश्चितम् ।

(*Nyāyabindu*, Chapter II.)



inference.¹ Again, according to others, as the connection or absence of connection between the middle and the major terms can be shown by internal inseparable connection (*antar-vyāpti*), the example forming the external inseparable connection (*bahir-vyāpti*) is useless.² For instance :—

The hill (minor term) is fiery (major term), because it is smoky (middle term) as a kitchen (example).

Here the hill is an integral part of the inference, and in it may be found the necessary connection between fire and smoke. Why then should we burden our inference with an example from without? The kitchen certainly shows the same connection: fire and smoke are found together there: but the kitchen is not an essential part of the inference, and so for the purpose in hand the connection which it proves may be described as the external inseparable connection. We must look to logical neatness, and the economy of mental labour, since the mind is liable to be confused when the unessential is brought across its track.

97. The application (*upanaya*) and conclusion (*nigamana*) as parts of the syllogism are also useless, but these together with the example are to be employed to convince men of small intellect.³

[Parts of a syllogism. *Avayava* or parts of a syllogism are stated to be the following :—

1. *Pakṣa-prayoga* (use of the minor term, otherwise called proposition, *pratijñā*)—the hill is fiery.
2. *Hetu-prayoga* (use of the middle term)—because it is smoky.
3. *Dṛṣṭānta* (example)—whatever is fiery is smoky just as a kitchen.
4. *Upanaya* (application)—this hill is smoky.
5. *Nigamana* (conclusion)—therefore this hill is fiery.

98. Non-existence (*abhāva* or *anupalabdhi*) is subdivided as (1) antecedent (*prājabhāva*); (2) subsequent (*pradhvaṃsābhāva*); (3) mutual (*itaretarābhāva*); and (4) absolute (*atyantābhāva*). Various kinds of *ābhāsa* or fallacy are also enumerated. Under the verbal

¹ चिविधं साधनमभिधायैव तत्समर्थनं विदधानः कः शङ्क न परप्रयोगम् अङ्गीकुरुते ॥ २९ ॥

(Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokaśālikāra,
Chap. III.)

² अन्वयान्तरा हेतोः साध्यप्रत्यायने शङ्कावशतो च बहिर्व्याप्तेरङ्गावनं शयम् ॥ ३० ॥

(Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokaśālikāra,
Chap. III.)

³ मन्दमतीक्ष्णं व्युत्पादयितुं दृष्टान्तोपनयनिगमनान्यपि प्रयोज्यानि ॥ ३१ ॥

(Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokaśālikāra,
Chap. III.)



testimony (i.e., *āgama*) as also under the method of one-sided interpretation (*naya*) there is given an elaborate exposition of the *Saptabhāṅgīnaya* (sevenfold paralogism). The mediate and immediate results of valid knowledge (*pramāṇa*) have been clearly laid down.

99. The results of knowledge and the practical use made of them are stated to be not illusory (*saṃvṛti*), but real (*pāramārthika*).

100. Under *naya* (the method of comprehending a thing from one particular point of view), the fallacies of it (*nayābhāsa*) are also enumerated thus :—

- (1) *Naigamābhāsa* (the fallacy of the *naigama*)—e.g., in estimating a soul we make a distinction between its “existence” (generic property) and its “consciousness” (specific property).
Fallacies of Naya.
- (2) *Samgrahābhāsa* (the fallacy of the collective)—occurs when we call a thing real if it possesses the generic property alone, altogether losing sight of its specific properties, as when we say a bamboo is real so far as it is a tree, but it has no specific properties.
- (3) *Vyavahārābhāsa* (the fallacy of the practical)—e.g., the Cārvāka philosophy which makes a wrong distinction of substance, quality, etc.
- (4) *Rjusūtrābhāsa* (the fallacy of the straight expression)—as the Tathāgata philosophy which altogether denies the reality of things.
- (5) *Sabdābhāsa* (the verbal fallacy)—occurs when we recognise the distinction of times into past, present and future, but go on attaching one and the same meaning to a word in all the three times, e.g., if we now use the word “kratu” (sacrifice) in the sense of “strength” which it signified a thousand years ago.
- (6) *Samabhirūḍhābhāsa* (the fallacy of the subtle)—occurs when we interpret synonymous words such as Indra, Sakra, Purandara, etc., signifying altogether different things.
- (7) *Evambhūtābhāsa* (the fallacy of the such-like)—occurs when a thing is discarded simply because it does not, at the moment, possess the properties implied by the name, e.g., Rāma is not a man (a thinking animal) because he is not at present thinking.

101. The soul (*ātmā*) which is the doer and enjoyer, and an embodiment of consciousness, is of the same size as its body.



In every person there is a separate soul which, having got rid of the bondage of its *karma* (act-fruits), attains emancipation.

102. The last chapter expounds the method of debate.

Rules of Debate. Discussion (*Vāda*) consists in assertion and counter-assertion for the establishment of a certain proposition by rejecting its opposite. The disputant or the person who opens the discussion may be eager either to gain a victory or to ascertain a truth. The truth may be sought either for one's own self as a disciple seeks it, or for others as a teacher seeks it. The same remarks apply to the opponent or respondent. There are four constituents of a council of discussion, *viz.*, (1) the disputant (*vādi*); (2) the opponent (*prativādi*); (3) the members (*sabhya*); and (4) the president (*sabhāpati*). The duty of the disputant and his opponent consists in establishing his own side and opposing the other side by means of proof. The members must be acceptable to both the parties in respect of the skill in grasping their dogmas; they must have a good memory, be very learned, and possess genius, patience and impartiality. Their duties consist in stating the assertions and replies of the disputant and his opponent with reference to the particular subject of discussion, in estimating the merits and demerits of their arguments and counter-arguments, in occasionally interrupting them for setting forth some established conclusions, and in, as far as possible, declaring the result of the discussion. The President must be endowed with wisdom, authority, forbearance and impartiality. His duty consists in judging the speeches of the parties and the members, as also in preventing quarrels, etc., among them. In the event of the parties being desirous of victory alone, they may continue the discussion with vigour as long as the members wish; but if they are eager to ascertain the truth alone, they may continue the discussion so long as the truth is not ascertained and so long as they retain their vigour.

HEMACANDRA SŪRI (1088-1172 A.D.).

103. Hemacandra Sūri¹ (surnamed *Kalikāla-sarvajña*), born at Dhandhuka in Ahmedabad, was a pupil of Devacandra of the Vajrasākhā. He was a contemporary of King Jaya Simha and is said to have been the preceptor of Māhārāja Kumāra Pāla of Guzerat about Samvat 1199-1229. He was the author of a large number of works such as *Kāvyaṇuśāsana-vṛtti*, Chan-

¹ For details about Hemacandra, see Bühler's "Ueber das Leben des Jaina Monches Hemacandra"; Peterson's 4th Report, p. cxli, and p. 82; and also Peterson's lecture on the story of Hema Candra published in the *Bombay Gazette*, August 29, 1895.



donuśāsanavṛtti, Abhidhāna-cintāmaṇi or Nāmamālā, Anekārtha-saṁgraha, Dvāśraya-mahā-kāvya, Triṣaṣṭiśalākāpuruṣa-caritra (a part of which is called Mahāvīracaritra and the appendix called Parīṣiṣṭaparva), Yogaśāstra, Nighaṇṭuśeṣa, etc.

104. He was also the author of a most important work on logic called *Pramāṇa-mīmāṃsā*,¹ on which he himself wrote a commentary. This work, which is divided into five chapters, is written in the *Sūtra* or aphoristic style, and not in the form of a *prakaraṇa* (commentary).

105. He was a spiritual brother of Pradyumna Sūri,² was born in Saṁvat 1145 or 1088 A.D., took the vow (*vrata*) in 1150 Saṁvat or 1093 A.D., attained the rank of Sūri in 1166 Saṁvat or 1109 A.D., and ascended to heaven (died) in 1229 Saṁvat or 1172 A.D.³

CANDRAPRABHA SŪRI (1102 A.D.).

106. Candraprabha Sūri (born in Guzerat), who founded the Pārṇimāgaccha⁴ in Saṁvat 1159 or 1102 A.D., was a pupil of

¹ A manuscript of the *Pramāṇa-mīmāṃsā* with the commentary by the author himself has been noticed by Peterson in his 5th Report on Sanskrit MSS., pp. 147-148. In explaining why the *Pramāṇa-mīmāṃsā* was written in the form of aphorisms, Hemacandra in the first chapter of the commentary says:—

वाचकमुष्णविरचितानि सकलशास्त्रचूडामणिभूतानि तत्त्वार्थसूत्राणीति यद्येव-
मकलङ्कधर्मकौष्ठादिवत् प्रकरणमेव किं नारभ्यते किमनया सूत्रकारत्वादीपुष्पिकया
मेवं बोधः । भिन्नवचिह्नं यं अनस्ततो नास्य स्वेच्छाप्रतिबन्धो लौकिकराजकीयं वा
शासनमस्तीति यत्किञ्चिदेतत् तत्र वर्षेसूत्राग्रकेः पञ्चभिरध्यायेः शास्त्रमेतद्वचयदा-
चार्यः । नस्य च प्रेक्षावत्प्रवृत्त्यंगमभिधातुमिदमादिस्त्वम् । अथ प्रमाणमौमांसा
अथ रत्यस्य अधिकारार्थत्वात् ।

(Quoted in Peterson's 5th Report, p. 148.)

² श्रीमाध्वन्द्रकुलेऽभवद्गुणनिधिः प्रद्युम्नसूरिप्रमु-
हंभ्यस्य स सिद्धहेमविधये श्रीहेमसूरिविधिः ॥

(Candrasena's commentary on *Utpādasiddhiprakaraṇa*, a manuscript of which is noticed in Peterson's 3rd Report, p. 209.)

³ शरवेदेश्वरे वर्षे कार्तिके पूर्णिमानिधिः ।

जन्माभवत् प्रभोर्द्यौमवाप्यशंभो व्रतं तथा ॥

रघुपदीश्वरे सूरिप्रतिष्ठा समजायत ।

नन्दद्वयर्षौ वर्षेऽवसानमभवत् प्रभोः ॥

(*Prabhāvakacar.*, XXII, v. 851 seq., quoted by Klatt in *Ind. Ant.*, Vol. XI, Sept. 1882, p. 254.)

⁴ For the origin of the Pārṇimāgaccha see Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's Report, 1883-84, p. 147.



Jayasīṃha Sūri and preceptor of Dharmaghoṣa. He¹ was the author of Darśanaśuddhi, otherwise called Samyaktva-prakaraṇa, and possibly also of the two logical treatises called the Prameyaratnakōśa and Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti.² He was a great logician, and in debate appeared as a lion before the opponents who resembled elephants.³

107. The Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti is an excellent commentary on the Nyāyāvatāra of Siddhasena Divākara. In it mention is made of the Buddhist logicians Dharmottara, Arcata⁴ and others, and there is also a criticism of the views of Saugata, Naiyāyika, Mīmāṃsaka, Vaiśeṣika, Sāṃkhya, Cārvāka, Bauddha, Sauddhodani, Kaṇabhakṣa, Akṣapāda, Brahama-vādi, etc.

NEMICANDRA KAVI (ABOUT 1150 A.D.).

108. Nemicaṇḍra, born in Guzerat, who combatted the views of the Hindu philosopher Kaṇāda, was a great teacher of

¹ For Candraprabha Sūri see also Peterson's 4th Report, p. xxvii.

² The manuscript of Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti, which I consulted, was obtained from Bhavanagar, Bombay, through Munis Dharmavijaya and Indravijaya. In the Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti itself there is no mention of Candraprabha Sūri. Elsewhere I have seen it stated that it was the work of that author. The authorship must, however, for the present, remain an open question. In the colophon of the Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti it is stated that it was the work of Siddhasena-Divākara-vyākhyānaka or simply Siddha-vyākhyānaka which was evidently a surname. Munis Dharmavijaya and Indravijaya relying on the line **याख्याल्लक्ष्मणसिद्धनाथः** (quoted from Ratnaprabha Sūri's Upadeśamālā-viśeṣa-vṛtti in Peterson's 3rd Report, p. 168) are inclined to identify Siddha-vyākhyānaka with Siddharṣi who lived in Śaṃvat 962 or 905 A.D. (as is evident from Peterson's 4th Report, p. cxxix). There is another commentary on the Nyāyāvatāra by Haribhadra Sūri. For Darśanaśuddhi, vide Peterson 3, App. p. 91; for Prameya-ratna-kōśa, vide the Jaināgama List, published in Bombay, p. 77; and for the Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti vide Peterson 3, p. xvi.

³ **तीर्थे वीरविभोः सुधर्मगणशृङ्खलानलज्ज्वलि
द्यारिचोन्नलचन्द्रगच्छजलधिप्रोक्षामशीतयुतिः ।
साहित्यागमतर्कलक्षणमहाविद्यापगसागरः
श्रीचन्द्रप्रभस्वरिरद्भुतमतिर्वादीभसिंहोऽभवत् ॥ १ ॥**

(Daśavaikālikaṭīkā by Tilakācārya, noticed in Peterson's 5th Report, p. 65.)

⁴ प्रमाणाद्यादि ध्वनेन च तादात्म्यादुत्पन्निलक्षणसंबन्ध विकलतया ध्वनेरद्विरर्थं प्रति प्रामाण्ययोगाद् अभिधेयादिस्वरूपनद्वारोत्पन्नायंमंशयमुखेन योतारः यवर्णं प्रति प्रोत्साह्यन्ते इति धर्मांतरो मन्यते अर्थादस्तु आह न आवकोत्पादकमेतत् प्रामाण्याभावात् तेषां चाप्रमाणादप्रवृत्तेः ।

(Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti, on verse 1.)



logic.¹ He was a pupil of Vairasvāmi and preceptor of Sāgarendu (Sāgaracandra) Muni, as is mentioned by Mānikyacandra, Sāgarendu Muṇi's pupil, in his Pārśvanātha-caritra written in Samvat 1276 or 1219 A.D. As Mānikyacandra flourished about 1219 A.D., his preceptor's preceptor Nemicaṇḍra² must have lived about 1150 A.D. Nemicaṇḍra was styled a *Kavi*.³

ANANDA SŪRI AND AMARACANDRA SŪRI, NICKNAMED TIGER-CUB AND LION-CUB (1093-1150 A.D.).

109. These two, born in Guzerat, were great logicians who, even in their boyhood having overcome their elephant-like opponents in dispute, were nicknamed, respectively, *Vyāghra-śiśuka* (Tiger-cub) and *Siṃha-śiśuka* (Lion-cub.)⁴ They⁵ were the twin pupils and successors of Mahendra Sūri in the Nāgendra-gaccha, and were succeeded by Haribhadra Sūri. As Siddharāja from whom they received their nicknames ascended the throne in Samvat 1150 or 1093 A.D., they must have flourished at the beginning of the 12th century A.D. It is probably these two

१ यदुत्कीर्णलनाविलासवसतिश्चक्षुषोऽर्पति
स्वपद्मोदयचन्द्रनाः समञ्जनि योनेमिचन्द्रप्रभुः ।
निःसामान्यगुणैर्भुवि प्रहमरैः प्राप्तेयशोऽलौक्यलैः
यद्यके कथमोजिनी मुनिपतेर्यथं मतं सवेतः ॥ १६ ॥

(Pārśvanātha caritra noticed in Peterson 3, p. 160.)

The same verse is quoted almost verbatim in the Kāvya-prakāśa-saṁketa by Mānikyacandra Sūri, noticed in Peterson 3, p. 321.

² For Nemicaṇḍra, see also Peterson 4, p. lxxi.

³ See Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's Report, 1883-84, p. 122.

⁴ Udayaprabha Sūri, who was the successor of Haribhadra Sūri through Vijayasena Sūri, in his Dharmābhyudaya-mahākāvya, noticed by Peterson in his 3rd Report, pp. 16-19, writes:—

आनन्दसूरिरिति [तस्य वभूव] शिष्यः
पूर्वोपरः शमधरोऽमरचन्द्रसूरिः ।
धर्मद्विपक्ष्य दशनाविव पापदत्त-
चोदचमो जयति यो विशदो विभातः ॥ १ ॥
अस्त्राववाङ्मयपथोनिधिमन्दरादि-
मुद्राजुषोः किमनयोः सुमहे महिम्नः
वाक्येऽपि निर्दलितवादिमजो जगद
यो व्याघ्रसिंहशिष्यकाविति सिद्धराजः ॥ ४ ॥

⁵ For further particulars of Ananda Sūri and Amaracandra Sūri see Peterson 4, p. vii. 8



logicians who are referred to by the Hindu logician Gaṅgeśa Upādhyāya in his *Tattva-cintāmaṇi* under *Siṃha-vyūghrī-lakṣaṇa* of Vyāpti.

HARIBHADRA SŪRI (ABOUT 1168 A.D.).

110. We find mention of at least two S'vetāmbara Jaina authors bearing the name Haribhadra Sūri. One died¹ in Saṃvat 535 or 478 A.D., while the other, who was a pupil of Ānanda Sūri and Amaracandra Sūri of the Nāgendra-gaccha, lived about Saṃvat 1225 or 1168 A.D.² It is this second Haribhadra Sūri who was called "Kalikāla-Gautama."³ He must have been an eminent logician if we suppose him to be the author⁴ of the *Saddarśana-samuccaya*, the *Daśavaikālika-niryukti-tīkā*, the *Nyāya-praveśaka-sūtra* and the *Nyāyāvatāra-vṛtti*. There are

१ पंचमस्य पण्णोय विष्णुमकालाचो भक्ति चत्वारिंशो ।

हरिभद्रसूरिसूरो निरुच्यो दिग्गज सिवसुरसूक्त ॥ १०० ॥

(Gacchotpatti-prakīrṇaka quoted in the *Gāthāsāhasrī* noticed in Peterson 3, p. 284.)

² Klatt refers to Bühler's *Sukṛtasamkīrtana*, pp. 24-25; see Peterson 4, pp. cxxxix, cxi.

३ सिद्धान्तोपनिषद्विषयहृदयो धीजन्यभूमिसूक्तयोः

पट्टे श्रीहरिभद्रसूरिरभवचारिविषयमपणोः ।

शान्ता शून्यमनावयेरतिचिरादस्मिन्नवस्थानतः

सन्तुष्टैः कलिकालमौतम इति पञ्चातिवितेने गुणैः ॥ ५ ॥

(*Dharmābhyudaya-mahākāvya* by Udayaprabha Sūri noticed in Peterson 3, Appendix I, p. 18.)

⁴ In the concluding lines of the *Daśavaikālika-niryukti-tīkā* it is stated that the author of that work was one Haribhadra Sūri who was a *dharma-putra* of Yākinī. A similar description of Haribhadra the author of *Saddarśana-samuccaya* is found in the opening sentences of Guparatna's commentary on that work (dated about 1409 A.D.). The *Caturvīṃśati-prabandha* by Rājaśekhara Sūri composed in Saṃvat 1405 or 1348 A.D. makes a like reference to Haribhadra, the author of *Nyāyāvatāra-vṛtti*. Now the *dharma-putra* of Yākinī is generally held to be a surname of the first Haribhadra Sūri whose disciples were Haṃsa and Paramahaṃsa, as is evident from Prabhācandra Sūri's *Prabhāvaka-caritra* dated about 1277 A.D.

In the *Gacchotpatti-prakaraṇa*, *Gāthā-sāhasrī*, *Vicāra-sāra-prakaraṇa*, *Vicārāmṛta-saṃgraha*, *Tapāgacchapattāvalī*, *Kharataragaccha-pattāvalī*, etc., Haribhadra Sūri I. is stated to have flourished in Saṃvat 535 or 478 A.D.

Now the *Nyāyāvatāra* which is alleged to have been commented on by Haribhadra Sūri I. was itself composed about 533 A.D. (that is, after 478 A.D.), and *Dharmakīrti*, whose logical doctrines have been referred to in the *Saddarśana-samuccaya*, lived about 650 A.D. These facts prove that Haribhadra the author of *Nyāyāvatāra-vṛtti* and *Saddarśana-samuccaya* lived after 650 A.D.



strong grounds for supposing that the *Ṣaddarśana-samuccaya* was not the work of the first Haribhadra Sūri, as it refers in the chapter on the *Bauddhadarśana* to the views of such authors as Dignāga, Dharmakīrti,¹ and others who flourished long after the 5th century A.D. The six systems (*Ṣaddarśana*) treated by him are (1) *Bauddha*, (2) *Naiyāyika*, (3) *Sāṃkhya*, (4) *Jaina*, (5) *Vaiśeṣika* and (6) *Jaiminiya*.

111. Haribhadra Sūri is often described² as having protected the word of the Arhats like a mother by his 1,400 works. He is said to have used the word *viraha* (separation or sorrow) as his mark in the last verse of each of his works. He was by birth a *Brāhmaṇa* and was chaplain to king Jitāri whose capital was

Dr. Jacobi in his letter, dated the 21st October 1907, writes to me that "Haribhadra used the word *viraha* in the *Samaraiccakahā*, which is alluded to by Siddharṣi who wrote in 905 A.D."

Regarding the dates of the *Ṣaddarśana-samuccaya*, etc., he observes:—These are "unanimously ascribed to the first Haribhadra," "whose date, I believe, with Prof. Leumann, to have been wrongly referred to the *Saṃvat* era instead of the *Valabhi* or *Gupta era*, which commenced in 319 A.D."

According to Dr. Jacobi, therefore, the *Ṣaddarśana-samuccaya*, etc., were written by the first Haribhadra Sūri, who died in 535 Gupta *Saṃvat* or 854 A.D.

Dr. Jacobi's theory removes many of our difficulties, yet it is far from being conclusive, as the Jaina authors very seldom used the Gupta era. Moreover, it is inexplicable why *Vācaspati Miśra* and *Udayanācārya* did not refer to such an excellent compendium of Indian philosophy as the *Ṣaddarśana-samuccaya* if it existed as early as the 9th or 10th century A.D. I am therefore inclined to believe that Haribhadra Sūri II was the author of the *Ṣaddarśana-samuccaya*, *Nyāyāvatāra-vṛtti*, etc., while the *Samaraiccakahā* and other treatises might be the works of the first Haribhadra Sūri.

But I must confess that the modern Jaina Paṇḍitas such as *Munī Dharmavijaya* and *Indravijaya* firmly believe that the author of all these works was the first Haribhadra Sūri who, according to them, flourished in 535 *Vikrama Saṃvat*, or 478 A.D.

प्रत्यक्षं कल्पनापोदमधानं तत्र बुध्यताम् ।

चिरुपाजिह्वतो छिद्रिज्ञानं अनुमानसंश्रितम् ॥

(*Ṣaddarśana-samuccaya*, chapter on *Bauddha-darśana*, p. 38, edited by Dr. Suali).

This verse refers without doubt to the definition of *Pratyakṣa* and *Anumāna* given by *Dharmakīrti* who lived about 650 A.D.

² Klatt in his "Pattāvali of the *Kharataragaccha*" in the *Ind. Ant.*, Vol. XI, Sept. 1882, p. 247; also Peterson 3, p. 35. Also:

सोमि श्रीहरिभद्रं तं येनार्चद्वीर्महारा ।

चतुर्दशप्रकरणसत्यागोप्यत माहवत् ॥ १६ ॥

Amaraavāmicarita by *Munīratna Sūri* noticed in Peterson 3, p. 91.



Chittore near the Citrakūṭa hill.¹ He was instructed in the Jaina doctrine by Jinabhaṭa. Two of his pupils, named Haṃsa and Paramahaṃsa, are said to have left him as missionaries of the Jaina faith, and to have been slain in the Bhoṭa country (Tibet) by the fanatical Buddhists whom they sought to convert. The sorrow caused by the death of these two pupils is said to have been symbolised in the word *viraha*.

112. It is generally supposed that Haribhadra Sūri, whose pupils were killed in Tibet, was the first author of that name. But there will be no inconsistency if we suppose him to be the second Haribhadra Sūri, for the religious intercourse between India and Tibet was more frequent in the 12th century A.D. than in the 5th century, when Tibet had scarcely emerged into the ken of history.

RATNAPRABHA SŪRI (1181 A.D.).

113. Ratnaprabha Sūri, who belonged to the Śvetāmbara sect, was a logician of repute, being the author of a light commentary (*laghu-tīkā*) on the Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokāṅkāra called *Syādvāda-ratnāvatārikā*² in which are quoted the views of the Buddhist logicians Arcata (q. v.) and Dharmottara (q. v.)

114. While in Broach at the Aśvavabodhatīrtha in Saṃvat 1238 or 1181 A.D., he wrote another work called *Upadeśamālā-vṛtti*³ to please Bhadreśvara Sūri and in payment of the debt he owed to Vijayasena Sūri, the brother of Bhadreśvara. There he gives his spiritual descent in the Vṛhadgaccha as follows : (1) Muncandra Sūri ; (2) Deva Sūri ; (3) Bhadreśvara Sūri and (4) Ratnaprabha Sūri.⁴

¹ Vide Introduction to Śaḍdarśanasamuccaya published in the Chowkhamba series, Benares.

प्रमाणे च प्रमेये च बालानां बुद्धिसिद्धये ।
किञ्चिद् वचनचातुर्यं चापलायेयमादधे ॥
प्रमेयरत्नकोटीभिः पूर्णैरङ्गाकरो मयान्
तत्रावतारमानेष इति रक्षाः कृतार्थता ॥

² (*Syādvāda-ratnāvatārikā*, Muni Dharmavijaya's MSS., p. 99). A part of the *Syādvāda-ratnāvatārikā* has been printed and published in the Benares Jaina Yāśovijaya series.

वीरवप्रभसूरिभिः शुभकृते श्रीदेवसूरिप्रभोः ।
शिष्यैः सेयमकारि सम्प्रदत्तते इति विज्ञेयार्थिनाम् ॥
विक्रमादसुलोकाकं (१२२८) वर्षे माघे समर्पिता ।
एकादशसहस्राणि सार्धं पञ्चशतं तथा ॥

(*Upadeśamālā-vṛtti*, noticed in Peterson 5, p. 124).

⁴ For other particulars of Ratnaprabha Sūri, vide Peterson 4, p. cii. Compare also Weber II, p. 922, note 7.



MALLIṢEṆA SŪRI (1292 A.D.).

115. He belonged to the Nagendra Gaccha of the Śvetāmbara sect, and was the author of the *Syādvādamāñjarī*, a commentary on Hemacandra's *Vītarāga-stuti* or *Dvātrimśikā*. The *Syādvāda-māñjarī* contains an exposition of the *Pramāṇa*, *Saptabhaṅgīnaya*, etc., and criticises Akṣapāda's theories of *Pramāṇa*, *Chala*, *Jāti*, *Nigrahassthāna*, etc. The doctrines of the *Sāṃkhya*, *Aulūkyā*, *Jaiminiyā*, *Bhaṭṭapāda*, *Vedānta*, *Yogācāra*, *Madhyamika*, *Cārvāka*, etc., have also been his favourite subjects of attack. At the close of his work Malliṣeṇa describes himself as a pupil of Udayaprabha Sūri and as having composed the work in Śaka 1214 or A.D. 1292.¹

RĀJAŚEKHARA SŪRI (1348 A.D.).

116. Rājaśekhara Sūri, or Malladhāri Śrī Rājaśekhara Sūri, belonged to the Śvetāmbara sect and was the author of the *Ratnāvatārikā-pañjikā*,² a sub-commentary on the *Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokalāṅkara*, as also of two other works called *Syādvāda-kalikā* and *Caturviṃśatiprabandha*.³ He is also the author of a *Pañjikā* (commentary) on the *Nyāya-kandali* of the Hindu philosopher Śrī-dhara. He studied the *Nyāya-kandali* under teacher Jinaprabha,⁴ and is said to have lived in Samvat 1405 or 1348 A.D.⁵

JÑĀNA CANDRA (1350 A.D.).

117. He belonged to the Śvetāmbara sect and was the author of a gloss on the *Ratnāvatārikā* called the *Ratnāvatārikā-ṭippaṇa*, which discusses many abstruse points of logic and criticises the

¹ श्रीमक्षिपेष्टरिभिरकारि तस्यदगगनदिनमणिभिः ।

इतिरियं मयुरविमितशकान्दे दोषमदशि शनौ ॥ १ ॥

(*Syādvādamāñjarī*, p. 220, printed in the Benares Chowkhamba Sanskrit Series, and edited by Dāmodara Lal Gosvāmi.)

² A part of the *Ratnāvatārikā-pañjikā* has been printed and published in the Benares Jaina Yaśovijaya series.

³ This work has been published by Hira Lal Haṁsarāja at Jāmanagara in Kathiwar.

⁴ श्रीमच्छिनप्रभविभोरधिगत्य न्यायकदलीं किञ्चित् ।

तस्यां विदितलवमहं करवे स्वपरोपकाराय ॥

(*Nyāyakandali* of Śrīdhara with the *Pañjikā* of Rājaśekhara noticed in Peterson 3, p. 273; cf. also Peterson 3, pp. 28-29.)

⁵ Vide Weber II, p. 1207.



views of Dignāga¹ and others. He composed this work² under orders from his preceptor Rājāśekhara Sūri, who flourished in 1348 A.D. Jñāna Candra's date may approximately be fixed at about 1350 A.D.

GUṆARATNA (1409 A.D.).

118. Guṇaratna belonged to the Tapāgaccha of the Svetāmbara sect, and was the distinguished author of a commentary on the Śaddarśana-samuccaya³ called Śaddarśana-samuccaya-vṛtti or Tarka-rahasya-dīpikā in which the Nyāya (logic) along with other systems has been lucidly explained. He also wrote the Kriyā-ratna-samuccaya.

119. He is mentioned by Ratna-śekhara Sūri in the Srāddha-pratikramana-sūtra-vṛtti composed in Samvat 1496 or A.D. 1439.⁴ In that work Guṇaratna is mentioned as a pupil

तेनान्यापोहविषयाः प्रोक्ताः सामान्यगोचराः ।

मन्दाद्य बुद्धयश्चैव वस्तुन्येषामसम्भवात् ॥

अथ व्याख्या तेनाचार्य दिग्भागेन

अन्यापोहविषयाः ... प्रोक्ताः ॥

Jñānacandra's Ratnāvatārikā-tiṣṭhana, chap. I, p. 7, published in Yaśovijaya-granthamālā of Benares.

² रत्नाकरावतारिका वरटिप्पणं तत्

ज्ञानेन्द्रस्यतरङ्गोः स्वमतिः प्रदत्तो ।

तच्छिष्यको रचितवान् मल्लधारिपूज्य-

श्रीराजशेखरगुरोश्च निदेशमाय

Quoted from the MSS. of Ratnakarāvatārikā-tiṣṭhanaka, lent to me by Muni Dharmavijaya. A part of this work has been printed and published in the Benares Jaina Yaśovijaya series.

³ Śaddarśana-samuccaya with Vṛtti, edited by Dr. Suali, is being published by the Asiatic Society of Bengal. There is another commentary on Śaddarśanasamuccaya called Laghuvṛtti by Mañibhadra. It has been published in the Chowkhamba series.

⁴ The Srāddha-prati-kramana-sūtra-vṛtti by Ratnaśekhara Sūri, has been noticed in Peterson 3, pp. 226-227, whence the following lines are quoted :—

विष्णुततपेत्याख्या जगति जगच्चन्द्रसूर्योऽभुवन् ।

श्रीदेवसुन्दरगुरुममाद्य तदनुकमादिदिताः ॥ १ ।

पञ्च च तेषां शिष्यास्तेष्वप्याद्या ज्ञानमागता गुरवः । २ ।

कुलमण्डना दितोयाः श्रीगणेशास्ततोयाश्च ॥ ३ ॥



of Devasundara, who attained the exalted position of Sūri at Anahillapattana in Samvat 1420 or A.D. 1363.¹ Gunaratna must, therefore, have lived between A.D. 1363 and A.D. 1439. Devasundara Sūri, teacher of Gunaratna, was a contemporary of Muni-sundara Sūri, the famous author of the Gurvāvali² composed in Samvat 1466 or A.D. 1409. Gunaratna himself says that his Kriyāratna-samuccaya³ was composed in Samvat 1466 or A.D. 1409.

120. Gunaratna, in his elaborate commentary (*Vṛtti*) on the Śaddarsāna-samuccaya, has mentioned Śaundhodani, Dharmot-tarācārya, Arcāṭa, Dharmakīrti, Prajñākara, Kamalaśīla, Dig-nāga, and other Buddhist authors, as well as Tarkabhāṣā, Hetubindu, Arcāṭa-tarkaṭikā, Pramāṇa-vārtika, Tattvasam-graha, Nyāyabindu, Nyāyapraveśika, and other Buddhist works on logic, etc., in the chapter on the Bauddha system. Mention has also been made, in the chapter on the Nyāya, of such Hindu logicians as Akṣapāda, Vātsyāyana, Udyotakara, Vācas-pati, Udayana, Śrīkaṇṭha, Abhayatilakopādhyāya, Jayanta, and of such works as Nyāya-sūtra, Nyāyabhāṣya, Nyāya-vārtika, Tātparyāṭikā, Tātparyapariśuddhi, Nyāyālaṅkāra, Nyāyālaṅkāravṛtti, etc. The Nyāya-sāra of Bhā-sarvajña and the eighteen commentaries on it such as Nyāyabhūṣaṇa, Nyāya-kalikā, Nyāyakusumāñjali, etc., have also been mentioned.

पददर्शनवृत्तिक्रियारत्नसमुच्चयविचारनिचयसूत्रः ।

यथा श्रीसुगुह्यां प्रसादतोऽयं पदकृतिरुच्यते ।

श्रीरत्नचरमविहृतिमिमामकृत कृतितुष्टे ॥ १

¹ Vide Dr. Klatt on the Pattāvali of the Kharataragaccha in the Ind. Ant., Vol. XI, September 1882, pp. 255-256; cf. also Weber II, p. 884; and Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's Report, 1883-84, p. 157.

² रसरसमनुमितवर्षे १४६६ सुनिसुन्दरसूरिणा कृता पूर्वम् ।

मथ्येयवधायां गुणांलोभं जयश्रीदा ॥ ८२ ॥

(Gurvāvali, Jaina-Yaśovijaya grantha-mālā series, p. 109).

³ काले पदसपूर्वे १४६६ वत्सरमिते श्रीविक्रमाकाङ्क्षे

गुर्वादेशवशाद्विदुष्य च सदा सान्योपकारं परम् ।

यस्य श्रीगुणरत्नसूरिरतनोत् प्रज्ञाविद्योऽनोऽप्यसुं

निर्चेतुपकृतिप्रधानजननेः शोधस्त्वयं धीधनेः ॥ ६२ ॥

(Kriyāratna-samuccaya, Jaina Yaśovi-jaya granthamālā series, p. 309).

DHARMA-BHŪṢAṆA (ABOUT 1600 A.D.).

121. A Digambara author who wrote the *Nyāya-dīpikā* about 300 years ago. He has been mentioned in the *Tarkabhāṣā*¹ by Yaśovijaya Gaṇi.²

122. The *Nyāya-dīpikā* begins with a salutation³ to Arhat Vardhamāna. It is divided into three chapters (*Prakāśa* viz., (1) general characteristics of valid knowledge, *pramāṇa-sāmānya-lakṣaṇa*, (2) perception, *pratyakṣa*, and (3) indirect knowledge, *parokṣa*, including recollection, *smṛti*, recognition, *pratyabhijñāna*, argumentation, *tarka*, inference, *anumāna*, tradition, *āgama*, and the method of comprehending things from particular standpoints, *naya*.

123. The technical terms of logic have been defined and minutely examined and the views of other logicians, specially of the Buddhists, have been severely criticised. There are references to Sugata, Saugata, Bauddha, Tāthāgata, Mimāṃsaka, Yauga, Naiyāyika, Bhāṭṭa, Prābhākara, Dignāga, Samanta Bhadra, Akalaṅka Deva, Śālikā Nātha, Jainendra, Syād vāda-vidyāpati, Māṇikya Nandi Bhaṭṭāraka, Kumāra Nandi Bhaṭṭāraka, Udayana and others. The following works are also mentioned :—*Prameya-kamala-mārtanda*, *Rājavārtika*, *Sloka-vārtika*, *Sloka-vārtika-bhāṣya*, *Tattvārtha-sūtra*, *Tattvārthābhāṣya*, *Tattvārtha-sloka-vārtika*, *Āptamimāṃsā-vivaraṇa*, *Nyāyaviniścaya*, *Pramāṇa-nirṇaya*, *Pramāṇa-parīkṣā*, *Parīkṣā-mukha*, *Nyāyabindu*, etc.

YAŚOVIJAYA GAṆI (1680 A.D.).

124. Yaśovijaya⁴ belonged to the Śvetāmbara sect and was the famous author of *Nyāya-pradīpa*, *Tarkabhāṣā*, *Nyāya-rahasya*, *Nyāyāmṛta-taraṅgiṇī*, *Nyāya-khaṇḍa-khāḍya*, *Anekānta Jaina-mata-vyavasthā*, *Jñānabindu-prakaraṇa*, etc. He also wrote a commentary on the Digambara work *Aṣṭasāhasri*

¹ This work has been printed in Kolhāpura.

² इत्यं वा ज्ञाननिवर्तकत्वेन तर्कस्य प्रामाण्यं धर्मभूषणोक्तं सत्येव तत्र मिथ्याज्ञानरूपे व्यवच्छेदे संगच्छते ।

Yaśovijaya's *Tarkabhāṣā*, leaf 10, MSS. lent to me by Munis Dharma-vijaya and Indravijaya.

³ श्रीवर्द्धमानमहर्षेण नमो बालपञ्चमे ।

विरच्यते मितस्यैव सन्दर्भन्यायदीपिका ॥ १ ॥

(*Nyāyadīpikā*, chap. I).

⁴ For other particulars about Yaśovijaya see Peterson 6, p. xiv. For his works see the *Jaināgama List* published in Bombay.



called *Aṣṭasāhasrī-vṛtti*. The *Tarkabhāṣā* begins with a salutation to Jina.¹ It consists of three chapters, viz. (1) Valid knowledge, *pramāṇa*, (2) Knowledge from particular stand-points, *naya*, and (3) Imposition, *niḥkṣepa*. He occasionally discusses *vyāptigraha*, or the means of establishing the universal connection between the middle term and the major term.

125. He is descended from Hiravijaya, the well-known Sūri of Akbar's time (no. 58 of the *Tapāgaccha paṭṭāvalī*). He ascended heaven in Samvat 1745 or A.D. 1688 at Dabhoi, in modern Baroda State. To perpetuate his memory there has been established at Benares a college called *Jaina Yaśovijaya-pāṭhaśālā* under the auspices of which the sacred Jaina works are being published in a series called *Jaina Yaśovijaya-granthamālā*.

१ ऐन्द्रहृन्दनतं नम्रा जिनेन तच्चाद्यैर्देवितम्

प्रमाणनयनिलेखैश्चकंभाषां तनीम्यद्यम्

(*Tarkabhāṣā*, chap. 1).



BOOK II.

The Buddhist Logic.

CHAPTER I.

THE OLD BUDDHIST REFERENCES TO LOGIC.

BUDDHA GAUTAMA (623 B.C.—543 B.C.).

1. The Buddhists maintain that their religion is eternal. It was taught at different cycles by sages called Buddhas (the Enlightened Ones) or Tathāgatas (those who have realised the truth). In the present cycle, called *Mahā-bhadra-kalpa* (the very blessed cycle), four Buddhas are said to have already appeared, viz., Krakucchanda, Kanaka Muni, Kāśyapa and Gautama, while the fifth, viz., Maitreya, is yet to be born.¹

2. Of the past Buddhas the last, viz., Buddha Gautama, otherwise called Sākya Muni, was born at Kapilavastu (modern Nigliwa in the Nepal Terai) in 623 B.C., and attained *nirvāṇa* at Kuśinagara (modern Kuśinārā near Gorakhpur) in 543 B.C.² He passed almost his whole life in Magadha (modern Behar). He is regarded by modern scholars as the real founder of Buddhism, while his predecessors are considered as purely mythical.

ORIGIN OF THE PĀLI BUDDHIST LITERATURE (543 B.C.—76 B.C.).

3. Buddha Gautama is said to have delivered his teachings in the Māgadhi or Pāli language. On his death these teachings were rehearsed by the Buddhist monks in three councils³ held

¹ Vide Hardy's *Manual of Buddhism*, second edition, pp. 88—91.

² The exact date of Buddha is unknown. The date given here is according to the *Mahāvamsa*, the Pāli chronicle of Ceylon. The date of Buddha's *nirvāṇa* is placed by European scholars between 470—480 B.C. Cf. Dr. Fleet's article on "The Date of Buddha's Death" in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*, January, 1904.

³ For an account of the first and second councils, vide *Vinaya Pitaka*, *Culla Vagga*, 11th and 12th *Khandhakas*, translated by Rhys Davids and



at Rājagṛha, Vaiśālī and Pāṭaliputra under the patronage of kings Ajātaśatru, Kālāśoka and Aśoka about the year 543 B.C., 443 B.C. and 255 B.C.¹ respectively. The texts of the teachings as discussed and settled in these councils form the sacred scripture of the Buddhists. This scripture is called in Pāli *Tepiṭaka* or *Piṭakattaya* and in Sanskrit *Tripitaka* or *Ṭiṭakatraya* which signifies 'Three Baskets.' It consists of the Sermon Basket (*Sutta Piṭaka*), Discipline Basket (*Vinaya Piṭaka*) and the Metaphysical Basket (*Abhidhamma Piṭaka*), each of which embodies a large number of distinct works.

4. The monks assembled in the First Council, that is in the Council of Kāśyapa in 543 B.C., were called (1) Theras, and the scripture canonised by them was called Theravāda. Subsequently ten thousand monks of Vaiśālī having violated certain rules of the Theravāda were, by the decision of the Second Council in 443 B.C., expelled from the community of the Theras. These excluded priests were called (2) Mahāsāṅghikas who were the first heretical sect of the Buddhists. They made certain additions and alterations in the Theravāda. Afterwards within two hundred years from the *nirvāṇa* of Buddha 14 other heretical sects² arose, viz., (3) Gokulika, (4) Ekabbohārika, (5) Paññatti, (6) Bāhulika, (7) Cetiya, (8) Sabbatthi, (9) Dhammaguttika, (10) Kassapiya, (11) Saṅkantika, (12) Sutta, (13) Himavata, (14) Rājagiriya, (15) Siddhatthika, (16) Pubbaseliya, (17) Aparaseliya and (18) Vajiriya.

5. Just at the close of the Third Council about 255 B.C., the teachings of Buddha as canonised by the Theras in the form of the *Tepiṭaka* were carried³ by Mahinda, son of Emperor Aśoka, to the island of Ceylon where they were perpetuated by priests in oral tradition. They are said to have been committed to writing⁴ for the first time in Ceylon in the reign of Vattagāmaṇi during 104-76 B.C. Besides the *Tepiṭaka* there

Oldenberg, S.B.E. series, vol. XX, pp. 370, 386. For an account of the third council as also of the first and second, vide Wijesinha's translation of the *Mahāvamsa*, chapter V, pp. 25—29, as also chapters III and IV.

¹ As to the dates of the 1st and 2nd Councils I follow the Pāli *Mahāvamsa*. The date of the 3rd Council is in accordance with modern researches. Aśoka ascended the throne in 272 B.C. (Vide Vincent A. Smith's *Aśoka*, p. 63), and it was in the 17th year of his reign that the third Council took place (vide Wijesinha's *Mahāvamsa*, p. 29).

² For a discussion about the variant names and subdivisions of these sects, vide Wijesinha's *Mahāvamsa*, part I, chapter V, p. 15; and Dr. Rhys Davids' "Schools of Buddhist Belief" in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*, 1892, pp. 1-37.

³ Vide the *Mahāvamsa*, chapter XII.

⁴ Vide the *Mahāvamsa*, chapter XXXIII. Cf. also Dr. Alwis's *Lecture on the Pali Language* in the *Journal of the Pali Text Society*, London, 1883, p. 42.



were numerous other works written in Pāli which have immensely added to the bulk of the Pāli literature.

LOGIC TOUCHED ON IN THE PĀLI LITERATURE.

6. In the *Tepitaka*—nay in the whole Pāli literature—there is not a single treatise on Logic. This is not at all a matter of surprise, for, according to the Pāli works, our knowledge (called in Pāli: *Viññāna* and in Sanskrit: *Vijñāna*) has arisen from *Avidyā*¹ or cosmic blindness, and is therefore a mere illusion. Such being the character of our knowledge, it cannot form the subject-matter of Logic, the sole function of which consists in laying down criteria for determining real or valid knowledge.

7. The only topic bearing upon Logic which has been touched on in the Pāli works, is the division of knowledge into six kinds. In the *Tepitaka*² knowledge (*Viññāna*³) has been classified as (1) ocular (*cakkhu-viññānaṃ*), (2) auditory (*sota-viññānaṃ*), (3) olfactory (*ghāna-viññānaṃ*), (4) gustatory (*jivhā-viññānaṃ*), (5) tactual (*kāya-viññānaṃ*) and (6) mental (*mano-viññānaṃ*). But this classification has not been carried far enough to lay the foundation of a Logic that deserved the name of science.

* 8. In the *Tepitaka* there are, however, occasional references to a class of men who were called *Takki* (in Sanskrit: *Tarkin* or *Takkika* (in Sanskrit: *Tarkika*)—that is, those versed in reasoning. It is not known whether these men were Buddhists, Jainas or Brāhmaṇas, perhaps they were recruited from all communities. They were not logicians in the proper sense of the term but they appear to me to have been sophists who indulged in quibble and casuistry.

THE BRAHMA-JĀLA-SUTTA (543 B.C.—255 B.C.).

9. In the *Brahma-jāla-sutta*, which forms a part of the *Dīgha Nikāya* of the *Sutta Piṭaka* and was rehearsed in the three Buddhist Councils during 543 B.C.—255 B.C.,⁴ mention

¹ *Avidyā* (cosmic blindness) forms the first link in the chain of *Paṭicca samuppāda* explained in the *Vinaya Piṭaka*, *Mahāvagga*, *Paṭhama Khandhaka*, translated by Rhys Davids and Oldenberg, S.B.E. series, vol. III, pp. 73—75.

² *Vide* the *Aṅguttara Nikāya* III, 61, 8, edited by Dr. Morris in the Pāli Text Society series of London. *Vide* also the *Dhammasaṅgini*, and compare *Pariecheda* IV of the *Abhidhammatthasaṅgaha* which, though not included in the *Tepitaka*, sums up the topics of the *Abhidhamma Piṭaka*.

³ *Viññāna* is translated as knowledge or consciousness, such as *cakkhu-viññāna* signifies ocular knowledge or eye-consciousness.

⁴ "Hofrath Dr. Bühler, in the last work he published, expressed the

is made of those Sramanas and Brāhmaṇas who were *Takkī* and *Vīmaṃsī* and indulged in *Takka* and *Vīmaṃsā*. Buddha speaks of them thus :—

“ In this case, brethren, some recluse or Brāhmaṇa is addicted to *logic* [sophism] and *reasoning* [casuistry].” He gives utterance to the following conclusion of his own, beaten out by his *argumentations* and based on his *sophistry*: “ The soul and the world arose without a cause.”¹

This passage refers, in my opinion, to a sophist rather than to a teacher of Logic.

THE Udāna (543 B.C.—255 B.C.).

10. Again, in the Udāna, which is included in the Khuddaka Nikāya of the Sutta Pitaka and is supposed to have been rehearsed in the three Buddhist Councils during 543 B.C.—255 B.C., we read :—

“ As long as the perfect Buddhas do not appear, the *Takkikas* [sophists] are not corrected nor are the *Sāvakas*: owing to their evil views they are not released from misery.”²

This passage leaves no doubt that the *Takkikas* were sophists.

THE Kathāvatthupparakaraṇa (ABOUT 255 B.C.).

11. The Kathāvatthupparakaraṇa, a work of the Abhidhammapitaka, composed by Moggaliputta Tissa at the Third Bud-

opinion that these books, as we have them in the Pāli, are good evidence, certainly for the fifth, probably for the sixth, century B.C.”

—Rhys Davids' Preface to the Dialogues of the Buddha, p. XX.

¹ The Brahma-jāla-sutta 1—32 included in Dialogues of the Buddha translated by Rhys Davids, London, p. 42.

Dr. Rhys Davids translates *Takkī* (*Tarkī*) and *Vīmaṃsī* (*Mīmāṃsī*) as “addicted to *logic* and *reasoning*.” But the expression may also be rendered as “addicted to *sophism* and *casuistry*.”

The original Pāli runs thus :—

Idha, bhikkhave, ekacco samaṇo vā brāhmaṇo vā *takkī* hoti *vīmaṃsī*. So *takka-pariyāhataṃ vīmaṃsūnucaritaṃ sayam-paṭibhūnaṃ* evaṃ āha : “Adhicca-samuppanno attā ca loko cāti.”

—The Brahma-jāla-sutta 1—32 included in the Dīgha Nikāya, p. 29, edited by T. W. Rhys Davids and J. E. Carpenter, London.

² The original of this passage runs as follows :—

Yāva sammā sambuddhā loke n'uppajjanti, na *takkikū* sujjhanti na c'āpi *sāvakā*, duddiṭṭhī na dukkhā pamuccare'ti.

—Udāna, vi, 10, edited by Paul Steinthal in the Pāli Text Society series, London.



dhist Council during the reign of Aśoka about 255 B.C.,¹ mentions *paṭiññā* (in Sanskrit: *pratijñā*, proposition), *upanaya* (in Sanskrit, too: *upanaya*, application of reason), *niggaha* (in Sanskrit: *nigraha*, humiliation or defeat), etc.,² which are the technical terms of Logic. Though Moggaliputta Tissa has not made any actual reference to Logic, his mention of some of its technical terms warrants us to suppose that that science in some shape existed in India in his time about 255 B.C.

THE Milinda-pañha *alias* THE Bhikṣu-sūtra
(ABOUT 100 A.D.).

12. The only Pāli work in which an explicit reference to Logic called *Nīti* (or *Nyāya*) occurs is the Milinda-pañha otherwise known as the Bhikṣu-sūtra, which was composed about 100 A.D.³ It was translated into Chinese under the Eastern Tsin dynasty A.D. 317—420.⁴ In the Chinese collection of the Indian books it is designated as the Nāgasena-Bhikṣu-sūtra. This work contains questions of Milinda (the Greek King Menander of Bactria) and replies of Bhikṣu Nāga Sena on various abstruse matters. In it Milinda who was versed in Logic (*Nīti* or *Nyāya*) is thus described :—

¹ Aśoka ascended the throne of Magadha in 272 B.C. (*vide* Vincent A. Smith's Aśoka, p. 63). In the seventeenth year of his reign the Third Buddhist Council took place (Wijesinha's Mahāvamsa, p. 29).

² *Niggaha-catukkam* is the name of a section of the first chapter of the Kathāvatthupparakāraṇa. *Upanaya-catukkam* is the name of another section of that work. A passage, in which the terms *paṭiññā* and *niggaha* occur, is quoted below :—

No ca mayāṃ tayā tattha hetāya paṭiññāya hevaṃ paṭijānantā hevaṃ niggahetabbō (Kathāvatthupparakāraṇa, Siamese edition, p. 3, kindly lent to me by Anagārika H. Dharmapāla).

In the commentary on the above passage even *chala* (fraud), which is another technical term of Logic, has been used. *Of*.

Evam tena, chalena niggaha āropite idāni tass'eva paṭiññāya dhammena samena attavāde jayam dassetuṃ anulomanaye pucchā sakavādisa attano nissāya paṭiññāṃ paravādisa laddhiya kāsam adatvā....

(Kathāvatthupparakāraṇa-aṭṭhakathā, published by the Pali Text Society of London, p. 13).

It is evident from the opening passages of the Kathāvatthupparakāraṇa-aṭṭhakathā that Moggaliputta Tissa discussed in the Kathāvatthupparakāraṇa only those doctrines—Buddhist and heretic—which had originated after the First and Second Buddhist Councils. From this statement may we not draw the conclusion that the technical terms of Logic which he has used were unknown before the Second Buddhist Council?

³ For discussions about date *vide* Rhys Davids' Introduction to "the Questions of King Milinda" in the S. B. E. series, vol. xxxv.

⁴ *Vide* Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, No. 1358.



“Many were the arts and sciences he knew—holy tradition and secular law; the Sāṃkhya, Yoga, Nyāya and Vaiśeṣika systems of philosophy; arithmetic; music; medicine; the four Vedas, the Purāṇas, and the Itihāsas; astronomy, magic, causation and spells; the art of war; poetry; conveyancing—in a word, the whole nineteen.

As a disputant he was hard to equal, harder still to overcome; the acknowledged superior of all the founders of the various schools of thought. And as in wisdom so in strength of body, swiftness, and valour there was found none equal to Milinda in all India. He was rich, too, mighty in wealth and prosperity, and the number of his armed hosts knew no end. . . . The king, who was fond of wordy disputation, and eager for discussion with *casuists*, *sophists*, and gentry of that sort, looked at the sun (to ascertain the time), and then said to his ministers.”¹

13. The following dialogue² between Milinda and Nāga Sena is quoted to show what was thought to be the proper mode of carrying on debate in the days of those notable persons:—

“The King said: ‘Reverend Sir, will you discuss with me again?’

‘If your Majesty will discuss as a scholar (Paṇḍita), well; but if you will discuss as a king, no.’

‘How is it then that scholars discuss?’

‘When scholars talk a matter over with one another then is there a winding up, an unravelling; one or other is convicted of error, and he then acknowledges his mistake, distinctions are drawn, and contradictions; and yet thereby they are not angered. Thus do scholars, O King, discuss.’

‘And how do kings discuss?’

‘When a king, Your Majesty, discusses a matter, and he advances a point, if any one differ from him on that point, he is apt to fine him, saying: “Inflict such and such a punishment upon that fellow!” Thus, Your Majesty, do kings discuss.’

‘Very well. It is as a scholar, not as a king, that I will discuss. Let Your Reverence talk unrestrainedly, as you would with a brother, or a novice, or a lay disciple, or even with a servant. Be not afraid!’

ORIGIN OF THE MAHĀYĀNA (ABOUT 78 A.D.).

14. At the opening of the Christian era the north-western part of India was invaded by the Turuṣkas or Scythians. Kaniṣka,³ who was one of their chiefs, conquered Kāśmīra,

¹ Taken from Rhys Davids' translation of the Milinda-pañha called “the Questions of King Milinda” in S. B. E. series, vol. xxxv, pp. 6-7.

Nyāya is an equivalent for the original Nīti, causation for Hetu, casuists for Lokāyata and sophists for Vītāṇḍa.

Nīti may mean “polity,” but placed between Yoga and Vaiśeṣika it cannot but signify Nyāya.

² Vide Rhys Davids' Questions of King Milinda in the S. B. E. series, vol. xxxv, p. 46.

³ In the Tangyur, Mdo, vol. Gi, there is Mahārāja-Kanika-lekha, which is a letter addressed by Maticitra to King Kaniṣka. Hwen-thsang in the 7th Century A.D. records a prophecy of Buddha that 400 years after his nirvāṇa Kaniṣka would be born: vide Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World, vol. I, p. 99. The same prophecy is mentioned by Fa-hian about 399 A.D., showing thereby that Kaniṣka was regarded as historical even at that time. According to Tibetan books such as the



Palhava and Delhi, and is said to have founded the era called *Sakābda* in 78 A.D. He accepted the Buddhist faith and established a new system of Buddhism called *Mahāyāna*,¹ the Great Vehicle. The old system of Buddhism as promulgated in the Pāli *Tepitaka* was henceforth nicknamed *Hīnayāna*, the Little Vehicle. The *Mahāyāna* gradually spread to Nepal, Tibet, Mongolia, China, Japan, Corea, etc., while the *Hīnayāna* continued in Ceylon and thence spread to Burmah, Siam, etc. In India both the systems prevailed.

ORIGIN OF THE SANSKRIT BUDDHIST LITERATURE (ABOUT 78 A.D.).

15. Under the patronage of Kaniṣka a council² was held at Jālandhara under the superintendence of Pārśva (or Pūrṇaka) and Vasu Mitra. It consisted of 500 monks who composed in Sanskrit three works explanatory of the Pāli *Tepitaka*, viz., *Sūtra Upadeśa* of the *Sutta Pitaka*, *Vinaya Vibhāṣā* of the *Vinaya Pitaka* and *Abhidharma Vibhāṣā* of the *Abhidhamma Pitaka*. These three works written in Sanskrit were the earliest canonical books of the *Mahāyāna* School.

16. It must not, however, be supposed that there had been no Buddhist books written in Sanskrit before Kaniṣka held his council. As a fact Kaniṣka thought it expedient to introduce Sanskrit as the medium of Buddhistic communication seeing that there had already existed many valuable Buddhist books in that language. For instance, the *Abhidharma-vibhāṣā*, or rather the *Abhidharma-mahāvibhāṣā-śāstra*, which was compiled

Sum-paḥi-choḥ-byuñ, Kan' 'ta flourished in 33 B.C., that is, 400 years after the nirvāṇa of Buddha which is said to have taken place in 433 B.C. Dr. J. F. Fleet holds that Kaniṣka founded the Vikrama era in 58 B.C. (*vide* Traditional Date of Kaniṣka in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, October 1906). Dr. R. G. Bhandarker places Kaniṣka at the last quarter of the 3rd century A.D., as appears from "A peep into the early history of India" in the Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society for 1897-98, p. 396. Vincent A. Smith places Kaniṣka in 125 A.D., while Sylvain Lévi assigns him an earlier date of 50 A.D. (*vide* J.R.A.S., January 1905, pp. 52-53). But Mr. Beal, Mr. Lassen, Professor Kern and others adopt the view that the Saka era dates from Kaniṣka in 78 A.D.

¹ *Vide* Takakusu's I-tsing, p. XXV; also Satis Chandra Vidyābhusana's *Mahāyāna and Hīnayāna* in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, January 1900.

² An account of this council is given by Rai Sarat Chandra Das, C.I.E. in an article named "Some Historical facts connected with the rise and progress of Mahāyāna School of Buddhism, translated from the *Sum-paḥi-choḥ-byuñ*": in the Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, vol. I, part III, p. 18. *Vide* also Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," vol. I, p. 275; and also Monier Williams' *Buddhism*, pp. 68-69.

at the council of Kaniṣka was a mere commentary on Kātyāyana-putra's Abhidharma-jñāna-prasthāna-śāstra.¹ This last is a Sanskrit work explanatory of the Pāli Abhidhamma Piṭaka. It was composed 300 years after the nirvāṇa of Buddha or 100 years before the time of Kaniṣka. Though Kaniṣka was not thus the first founder of the Sanskrit Buddhist literature, it cannot but be acknowledged that it was he, who for the first time proclaimed Sanskrit as the language of the Buddhist Canon. Since his time there have been composed innumerable Buddhist works in Sanskrit of which nine called the *Nava Dharmas*² are specially worshipped by the Mahāyāna Buddhists.

LOGIC MENTIONED IN THE SANSKRIT BUDDHIST LITERATURE.

17. None³ of the works composed during or before the time of Kaniṣka has come down to us in its Sanskrit original, and I have had no opportunity of examining the Chinese or Tibetan version of the same. I cannot, therefore, say whether there is any mention of Logic in those works. But we have before us a very large collection of Sanskrit Buddhist works composed after the time of Kaniṣka. Many of these works, such as some of the *Nava Dharmas*, contain references to Logic, and several works are even replete with logical discussions.

THE Lalitavistara (BEFORE 250 A.D.).

18. The Lalitavistara, which is one of the *Nava Dharmas*, was translated into Chinese in 221-263 A.D.⁴ The Sanskrit original of it must have been prepared in India before that

¹ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, nos. 1263, 1273 and 1275. Regarding the authorship of Abhidharma-mahāvibhāṣā, or simply Mahāvibhāṣā, vide Takakusu in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, January 1905, p. 159.

² The *Nava Dharmas* or Nine Sacred Works are :—

(1) Aṣṭa-sāhasrikā Prajñāpāramitā, (2) Gaṇḍa-vyūha, (3) Daśa-bhūmī-ara, (4) Samādhi-rāja, (5) Laṅkāvatāra, (6) Saddharma-puṇḍarīka, (7) Tathāgata-guhyaka, (8) Lalitavistara and (9) Suvarṇa-prabhāsa.

Vide Hodgson's Illustrations of the Literature and Religion of the Buddhists, p. 19.

³ Dr. Rhys Davids in his Buddhist India, p. 316, observes that the three works composed at the Council of Kaniṣka are extant in European libraries.

⁴ The Lalitavistara was translated into Chinese four times. The first and third translations were lost by 730 A.D. The first was prepared under the Han dynasty A.D. 221-263, the second under the Western Tsin dynasty A.D. 265-316, the third under the earlier Suñ dynasty A.D. 420-479, and the fourth under the Thān dynasty A.D. 683. Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, nos. 159 and 160.



time. In this work Logic, under the name of *Hetu-vidyā*,¹ is mentioned along with the Sāṃkhya, Yoga, Vaiśeṣika, etc., in all of which the Bodhisattva (Buddha Gautama) is said to have acquired distinction.

EIGHTEEN SECTS OF THE BUDDHISTS.

19. In article 4 we have found that within 200 years after the *nirvāṇa* of Buddha there arose in India 17 heretical sects besides the orthodox priesthood called the Theras. In course of time some of these sects disappeared while new ones grew up, the result being that at the time of Kaniska, about 78 A.D., the Buddhists had already been divided into 18 sects² grouped into four classes as follows:—

I. Ārya Sarvāstivāda (1) Mūla Sarvāstivāda (2) Kāśyapiya (3) Mahiśāsaka (4) Dharma-guptiya (5) Bahuśrutiya (6) Tāmraśāṭiya (7) Vibhajyavādin	}	Belonging to the <i>Vaibhāṣika</i> School of Philosophy.
II. Ārya Sammitiya (8) Kurukullaka (9) Āvantika (10) Vātsīputriya		
III. Ārya Mahāsāṃghika (11) Pūrva-śāila (12) Aparā-śāila (13) Haimavata (14) Lokottaravādin (15) Prajñaptivādin		
IV. Ārya Sthavira (16) Mahāvihāra (17) Jetavanīya, and (18) Abhayagirivāsin.		
	}	Belonging to the <i>Sautrāntika</i> School of Philosophy.

All the sects mentioned above belonged to the *Hīnayāna* though later on they joined the *Mahāyāna* too.

१ निषेधो निगमे पुराणे इतिहासे वेदे व्याकरणे निरुक्ते शिखायां इन्द्रसि यज्ञकल्पे ज्योतिषि सांख्ये योगे क्रियाकल्पे वैशेषिके वैशिके अर्थविद्यायां वार्हस्पत्ये आश्वर्ये आसुरे अगस्त्ये इतिहासे हेतुविद्यायां जतुयन्त्रे सर्वेच बोधिसत्त्व एव विनिश्चये स्म ॥

Lalitavistara, edited by Dr. Rājendra Lal Mitra in the Bibliotheca Indica series, Calcutta, Chapter XII, p. 179.

² Vide the Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, vol. I,

FOUR SCHOOLS OF THE BUDDHIST PHILOSOPHY.

20. The philosophical views of the sects mentioned above were gradually formulated into two schools, viz., the (1) *Vaibhāṣika* and (2) *Sautrāntika*. The Mahāyāna sect of the Buddhists founded by Kaniska established two other schools of philosophy, viz., the (3) *Mādhyamika* and *Yogācāra*. So there were altogether four schools of philosophy, two of the *Hīnayāna* and two of the *Mahāyāna*.¹

21. *Vaibhāṣika* was a later appellation of the philosophy of the Sarvāstivāda (Pali : Sabbatthivāda) sect² who, as their name implies, admitted the reality of the world—internal and external. The fundamental philosophical work of this sect is Kātyāyana-putra's *Abhidharmajñāna-prasthāna-śāstra*,³ or simply *Jñāna-prasthāna-śāstra*, composed 300 years after the *nirvāṇa* of Buddha. The next work of this sect is the *Abhidharma-mahāvibhāṣā-śāstra*⁴ or simply *Vibhāṣā*, compiled at the council of Kaniska about 78 A.D. It is from this *Vibhāṣā* that the name *Vaibhāṣika*⁵ was derived. *Vibhāṣā* means "commentary" and the *Vaibhāṣika* philosophy seems to have been so called because it was based on the commentaries rather than on the original texts of the teachings of Buddha. Saṅghabhadra's *Nyāyānusāra-śāstra*,⁶ otherwise called *Kosa-kāraka-śāstra*, composed about 489 A.D.,⁷ is a most learned work of the *Vaibhāṣika* philosophy.

part III, p. 18; Takakusu's I-tsing, pp. xxiii, xxiv and xxv; Rhys Davids' article in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, 1891, p. 411, and 1892, pp. 1-37; Rockhill's Buddha, p. 181 f; Tārānātha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, pp. 270-274; and Wijesinha's Mahāvamsa, part I, Chapter V, p. 15.

¹ Vide Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World, vol. I, pp. 121, 139 n; and Takakusu's I-tsing, p. xxii.

² Vide Takakusu's I-tsing, p. xxi. The Ārya Sammitīyas, at any rate their subclass called the Vātsīputriyas, were also followers of the *Vaibhāṣika* philosophy. The Hindu philosopher Vācaspati Miśra in his *Nyāya vārtika-tātparyatikā* 3-1-1 quotes the opinions of the *Vaibhāṣikas* who were called Vātsīputras.

³ This work exists in Chinese and Tibetan: vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, nos. 1273, 1275.

⁴ This work, too, exists in Chinese and Tibetan: vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, nos. 1263, 1264.

⁵ Compare the explanation of *Vaibhāṣika* given by the Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya in his *Sarvadarāna-saṅgraha*, chapter on Baudha-darāna, translated by Cowell and Gough, second edition, p. 24. Vide also Satis Chandra Vidyābhūṣana's "Mādhyamika School" in the Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta for 1895, part II, p. 4.

⁶ This work exists in Chinese and Tibetan: vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, no. 1265.

⁷ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Appendix II, no. 95. For Saṅghabhadra, vide also Hwen-thsang's Travel in Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World, vol. I, pp. 193-194.



22. The name *Sautrāntika*¹ was derived from *Sūtrānta*, called in Pāli *Suttanta*, meaning "original text." The *Sautrāntika* philosophy seems to have been so called because it was based on the original text of the teachings of Buddha rather than on the commentaries thereon. The text on which the *Sautrāntika* philosophy was based belonged to the sect of Ārya Sthaviras, called in Pāli Theras, who held the First Council in 543 B.C., and possibly also to the sect of the Mahāsāṃghikas² who were the first dissenters in 443 B.C. The philosophical principles of this school are said to have been formulated in Kāśmīra³ during the reign of Kaniska about 78 A.D. by a sage named Dharmotara or Uttara-dharma.⁴ But the Chinese pilgrim Hwen-thsang, who visited India early in the 7th century A. D., states that the renowned teacher Kumāralabdha⁵ of Takṣaśilā (Taxila in the Punjab) was the founder of the *Sautrāntika* school and wrote several very valuable treatises on it. He is supposed to have lived about 300 A.D. as he was a contemporary of Nāgārjuna (q. v.), Ārya Deva (q. v.) and Aśvaghoṣa. There was another very famous teacher named Śrīlabdha⁶ who wrote *Vibhāṣā-sūtra* (or commentary on a work) of the *Sautrāntika* school. Hwen-thsang saw in Ayodhyā the ruins of a Saṅghārāma where Śrīlabdha resided.

MENTION OF LOGIC IN THE WORKS OF THESE SCHOOLS.

23. As none of the old works belonging to the *Vaibhāṣika* or *Sautrāntika* school has yet become accessible to us, I cannot state whether there is any mention of Logic in those works. But there are ample references to Logic in the works of the *Mādhyamika* and *Yogācāra* schools, short accounts of which are given below.

¹ Compare the explanation of the term *Sautrāntika* given by the Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya in the *Sarvadarāna-saṅgraha*, chapter on *Bauddha-darāna*, translated by Cowell and Gough, second edition, p. 26. *Vide* also Satis Chandra Vidyābhūṣana's "Mādhyamika School" in the *Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta* for 1895, part II, p. 4.

Vide Rhys Davids' *Buddhist India*, p. 168, and Beal's *Fahian and Sungyun*, p. 143.

² *Vide* Watters "On Yuan Chwang," vol. II, p. 161.

³ *Vide* the *Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta*, vol. I, part III, pp. 18, 19; and Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 59.

⁴ For the Dhammuttariya sect, *vide* Wassilief's *Buddhism*, p. 233; and Mahāvamsa, part I, chapter V, p. 15. Wijesinha's foot-note.

⁵ *Vide* Beal's *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, vol. II, p. 302; and Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 78, where Kumāralābha stands for Kumāra-labdha.

⁶ *Vide* Beal's *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, vol. I, pp. 225, 226; and Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 67.



ĀRYA NĀGĀRJUNA (ABOUT 300 A.D.).

24. The name *Mādhyamika* was derived from *madhyāma*, meaning the middle. The *Mādhyamika* philosophy was so called because it avoided two extremes, i.e., advocated neither the theory of absolute reality, nor that of total unreality, of the world, but chose a *middle path*,¹ inculcating that the world had only a conditional existence. The founder of this school was Nāgārjuna or rather Ārya Nāgārjuna, who was born at Vidarbha (modern Berar) in Mahākośala,² during the reign of King Sadvāha or Sātavāha³ [of the Andhra dynasty].⁴ He passed many of his days in meditation in a cave-dwelling of the Sri-parvata,⁵ that bordered on the river Krishnā. He was a pupil of Śāraha and is said to have converted a powerful king, named Bhoja Deva,⁶ to Buddhism.

¹ Compare—

अतो भावाभावान्तद्वयरहितत्वात् सर्वस्य भावानुसृतिरुचया शून्यता मध्यमा प्रतिपन्नधर्मो मार्ग इत्युच्यते ॥

—*Mādhyamika Vṛtti* published by the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, chapter XXIV, p. 185.

Compare the explanation of the term *Mādhyamika* given by the Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya, in the *Sarvadarśana-saṃgraha*, chapter on *Bauddha darśana*, translated by Cowell and Gough, second edition, p. 24; and also Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's *History of the Mādhyamika Philosophy of Nāgārjuna* in the *Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta*, 1897, part IV, pp. 7-20.

² Vide Hwen-thsang's *Travel in Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World*, vol. II, Book VIII, p. 97, and Book X, p. 210; Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," vol. II, pp. 201-202; and Wassiljew quoted by Schiefner in the *Geschichte des Buddhismus*, p. 301.

³ Sadvāha is the same as Sātavāha, which is a general name of the kings of the Andhra dynasty.—Vide Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's *Early History of the Dekkan*, second edition, pp. 25-37.

Nāgārjuna wrote an instructive letter to Sātavāha[na], whose private name in Chinese was Sh'-yen-tōh-cia. This letter is called *Ārya Nāgārjuna Bodhisattva Sūtrlekha*. It was translated into Chinese in 434 A.D. An English translation of this letter has appeared in the *Journal of the Pali Text Society of London*, 1883, pp. 71-75.

⁴ The Andhra kings ruled the northern portion of the Madras Presidency and the whole of Kalinga, and overthrew the Kanva dynasty in northern India about 31 B.C. They remained powerful up to 436 A.D. They were Buddhists, and it was by them that the magnificent marble stūpa at Amarāvati was erected.—Vide Sewell's *Lists of Antiquities in Madras*, vol. II, pp. 141-146.

⁵ For an account of Sri-parvata or Sri-taila see Hwen-thsang's *Life*, Introduction, p. xi, by Beal; Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 84; Wilson's *Mālatī-Mādhava*, act I; and Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's *Notes on Ratnāvali*, pp. 27-29.

⁶ Vide Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 66, 69-73.



25. Nāgārjuna is said to have lived four hundred years¹ after the *nirvāṇa* of Buddha, that is, in 33 B.C. But he does not appear to me to have so early a date as he was one of the early patrons or founders of the university of Nālandā,² which had not, perhaps, come into existence in the 1st century B.C., and was insignificant³ even at 399 A.D., when the Chinese pilgrim Fa-hian came to visit India. Nāgārjuna is stated by Lama Tārānātha to have been a contemporary of King Nemi Candra, who is supposed to have reigned about 300 A.D.⁴ The

¹ It is prophesied in the Mañju-śrī-mūla-tantra (called in Tibetan Hjam-dpal-rtsa-rgyud) that :—

དེ་བཞིན་གཤེགས་པ་ང་འདས་ནས།

ལོ་ནི་བཞི་བརྒྱ་ལོན་པ་ན།

དགོ་སྤྲོད་བྱ་ཞེས་དེ་འབོད་འབྱུང་།

བསྟན་པ་ལ་ནི་དད་ཅིང་པ་ན།

(Quoted in the Introduction to Ser-rab-don-bu published in Calcutta).

“Four hundred years after Buddha's departure from the world there will appear a Bhikṣu, named Nāgārjuna, who will do good to the believers in the doctrine.”

It should be noted that according to some books of Tibet, Buddha was born in 514 B.C., lived 81 years and attained *nirvāṇa* in 433 B.C. Nāgārjuna, who was born 400 years after the *nirvāṇa*, must, at this calculation, be placed in 33 B.C.

² Vide Tārānātha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, pp. 66, 69-73.

³ Fahian describes Nālandā as a mere village Nā-lo: vide Beal's Travels of Fahian and Sungyun, p. 111.

⁴ According to Lama Tārānātha, Nāgārjuna was a contemporary of King Nemi Candra, whose genealogy is thus traced :—

Akṣa Candra	}	Ruled in Aparāntaka.
Jaya Candra		
Nemi Candra		
Phaṇi Candra	}	Ruled in Magadha.
Bhaṁsa Candra		
Sāla Candra		
Gandra Gupta		

The six kings, beginning with Akṣa Candra to Sāla Candra, are stated to have been weak and insignificant, while Candra Gupta, the seventh king,



latest date that can be assigned to Nāgārjuna is 401 A.D.,¹ when his biography was translated into Chinese by Kumārajīva.

26. Nāgārjuna's *Mādhyamika-kārikā* is the first work of the *Mādhyamika* philosophy. In it he has occasionally referred to certain technicalities of Logic, such as the fallacy of *Sādhya-sama*² (*petitio principii*) in chapter IV. He was the author of several other works³ on the *Mādhyamika* philosophy, such as the (1) *Yukti-ṣaṣṭikā kārikā* or sixty memorial verses on argumentation, (2) *Vigraha-vyavartanī kārikā*, or memorial verses on conquering disputes, and (3) *Vigraha-vyavartanī vṛtti* or a commentary on the *Vigraha-vyavartanī kārikā*.⁴ In these works he has, as the titles indicate, largely employed the methods of Logic⁵ to establish the abstruse conclusions of the *Mādhyamika* philosophy.

ĀRYA DEVA (ABOUT 320 A.D.).

27. Deva⁶ or rather Ārya Deva was the next writer on the *Mādhyamika* philosophy. He is otherwise known as Karṇaripa,

is described as having been very powerful. This Candrar Gupta, who "did not take refuge in Buddha," may be the same who founded the Gupta era in 319 A.D. The reigns of his predecessors were very short. Nemi Candrar may be assigned to about 300 A.D.—Cf. Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 80-83.

¹ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Appendix I, No. 3.

² The *Mādhyamika-kārikā* with the *vṛtti* of Candrar Kīrti has been published by the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta; the work is being republished in the St. Petersburg Buddhist Text series under the editorship of Professor De La Vallée Poussin. The following verse refers to the fallacy of *Sādhya-sama* :—

विषये यः परीक्षारं कृते शून्यतया वदेत् ।
सर्वं तस्यापरिहृतं समं साध्येन जायते ॥

(*Mādhyamika-kārikā*, chapter IV).

³ For an account of some of the works on the Tantra by Nāgārjuna, vide Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's Introduction to the *Sragdharā-stotra* in the "Bibliotheca Indica" series. For the latest researches in the medical works of Nāgārjuna, see Dr. Palmyr Cordier's "Introduction A L'Etude des Traites Medicaux Sanscritas" printed in Hanoi, 1903; and for his hymns such as धम्मधातुस्तव, निवपमस्तव etc., vide Tangyur, *Bṛtōd-pa*, vol. Ka.

⁴ For an account of these works, vide the article "Indian Logic as preserved in Tibet, No. 3," by Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana in the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, new series, vol. III, No. 7, 1907. For the philosophical works of Nāgārjuna, see Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Appendix I, no. 3.

⁵ The *Nyāya-dvāra-tarka-sāstra*, as noticed in Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Nos. 1223, 1224, is not a work of Nāgārjuna but of Dignāga.

⁶ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Appendix



Kāṇa Deva, Nīla-netra and Piṅgala-netra. He was born in Southern India and was an eminent disciple of Nāgārjuna. According to Hwen-thsang,¹ he visited the countries of Mahākośala, Srughna, Prayāga, Coja and Vaiśālī, in all of which he won great renown by defeating the Tirthikas and preaching the true doctrines of Buddha. According to Lama Tārānātha,² Deva resided for a long time in Nālandā, where he was a Paṇḍita. He flourished during the reign of Candragupta, whose date is supposed to be about 320 A.D.³ The latest date that can be assigned to Deva is 401 A.D.,⁴ when his biography was translated into Chinese by Kumārajīva. He wrote numerous works on the *Mādhyamika* philosophy, such as the *Śataka-śāstra*, *Bhrama-pramathana-yukti-hetu-siddhi*,⁵ etc., all of which bear evidences of his knowledge of Logic.

LOGIC OF THE YOGĀCĀRA SCHOOL (ABOUT 300-500 A.D.).

28. The word *Yogācāra* is compounded of *yoga* meaning 'meditation' and *ācāra* meaning 'practice.' The *Yogācāra*⁶ or the contemplative system was so called because it emphasised the practice of meditation as means of attaining *Bhūmis*⁷ or the seventeen stages of Buddhistic Perfection. The chief dogma established in it is *ālaya-vijñāna*,⁸ the basis of conscious states,

I, No. 4; and Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," vol. I, p. 321, vol. II, pp. 225-226.

¹ Vide Beal's *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, vol. I, Book IV, pp. 186-190, Book V, p. 231; vol. II, Book X, pp. 210, 227, Book XII, p. 302, Book VIII, pp. 98-102.

² Vide Lama Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 83-86 and 93.

³ Vide foot-note 4, p. 69.

⁴ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's *Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka*, Appendix I, No. 4.

⁵ Vide Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's "Indian Logic as preserved in Tibet No. 3" in the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, new series, vol. III, No. 7, 1907.

⁶ The *Yogācāra* philosophy is generally known in China, Tibet and Nepal as *Yogācārya*. For an account of this system, vide Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," vol. I, p. 356; Dr. Schlagintweit's *Buddhism* quoted in the *Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta* for 1895, part II, Appendix IV.

Compare explanation of the word *Yogācāra* given by the Hindu Philosopher Mādhavācārya in the *Sarvadāriana-saṃgraha*, chapter on *Bauddha dāriana*, translated by Cowell and Gough, second edition, p. 24. Vide also Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's "The *Mādhyamika* School" in the *Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta*, 1895, part II, p. 4.

⁷ Vide *Dharma-saṃgraha*, LXIV and LXV, edited by Max Müller and Wenzel.

⁸ For an explanation of *ālaya-vijñāna*, see Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's note on p. 2 of the *Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra*, Calcutta Buddhist Text Society's edition, and also see p. 45 of the same work.



which is the same as our 'ego' or 'soul.' It is not known who was the founder of the *Yogācāra* school, but in the Tibetan and Chinese books the *Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra*, *Mahāsamaya Sūtra*, *Bodhisattva-caryā-nirdeśa* and the *Sapta-daśabhūmi-śāstra-yogācārya* have been named as the prominent old works of the system.¹

THE *Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra* (ABOUT 300 A.D.).

29. The *Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra*² is a very sacred work as it is one of the *Nava Dharmas*. The exact date of it is unknown, beyond the fact that it was translated into Chinese in 443 A.D.³ The approximate date seems to be 300 A.D., for, it existed at or before the time of Ārya Deva who mentions it.⁴ This work speaks in a prophetic style of the *Naiyāyikas* (dialecticians) and *Tārkikas* (logicians). Thus in chapter II of the work Mahāmāti asks Buddha :—

"Say how in the time to come *Naiyāyikas* will flourish?"⁵

¹ Vide Section Mdo of the Tangyur; Lama Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 111 f; Bunyiu Nanjio's *Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka*, Appendix I, No. 1; Beal's *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, vol. I, p. 226, vol. II, pp. 220, 275; and Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," vol. I, p. 371.

² The Sanskrit original of this work is being published by the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta under the editorship of Rai Sarat Chandra Das, C.I.E., and Dr. Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana. The work also exists in Chinese and Tibetan. Hwen-thsang mentions the *Laṅkāvatāra*, vide Beal's *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, Book XI, p. 251.

Vide an account of the *Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra* by Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*, 1906.

³ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's *Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka*, nos. 175, 176 and 177.

⁴ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's *Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka*, nos. 1259, 1260 and Appendix I, no. 4.

⁵ The Sanskrit original runs as follows :—

नैयायिकाः कथं भूवि भविष्यन्ति अनागतः ।

(*Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra*, Asiatic Society of Bengal's MSS., chapter II, leaf 11).

The Tibetan version runs thus :—

ཉེ་བ་ན་མས་ཀྱང་ཇི་ལྟ་བུར།

མ་འོངས་དུས་ན་འབྱུང་བ་གསུངས།།

(Kangyur, Mdo, vol. V, Asiatic Society of Bengal's xylograph).

"How is *tarka* (reasoning or argumentation) corrected, and how is it carried on?"¹

Again in chapter X of the work we read:—

"Whatever is produced is destructible: this is the conclusion of the *Tārkikas*."²

MAITREYA (ABOUT 400 A.D.).

30. The date of the *Mahāsamaya-sūtra*³ is not known. The *Bodhisattva-caryā-nirdeśa* was translated into Chinese during 414-421 A.D. and the *Sapta-daśa-bhūmi-śāstra-yogācārya* in 646-647 A.D. The author of these two works was Maitreya⁴ (called in Chinese 'Mirok'), who lived 900 years after the *nirvāṇa* of Buddha, that is about 400 A.D.⁵ He is reported by Hwen-thsang to have communicated the materials of three Buddhist treatises to Ārya Asaṅga while the latter was residing in a monastery in Ayodhyā.⁶ In the *Sapta-daśa-bhūmi-śāstra-yogācārya*⁷ Maitreya has discussed certain topics of Logic, a

¹ कथं हि शुध्यते तर्कः कथं तर्कः प्रवर्तते ।

(*Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra*, chapter II, leaf 11, A.S.B. MSS.)

ཇི་ལྟར་རྟོག་གི་རྣམ་དག་འགྱུར།

རྟོག་གི་ཅི་ཡི་སྒྲུབ་དུ་འགྱུར། ॥

(Kangyur, *Mdo*, vol. V.)

² छतकस्य विनाशः स्यात् तार्किकाणामर्थं नयः ।

(*Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra*, chapter X, leaf 143, A.S.B. MSS.)

བྱས་ན་རྣམ་པར་འཇིག་པར་འགྱུར། ॥

འདི་ནི་རྟོག་གི་ཅན་གྱི་ཚུལ། ॥

(Kangyur, *Mdo*, vol. V.)

³ Vide Dr. Schlagintweit's Buddhism quoted in the Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, 1895, part II, Appendix IV, p. 16.

⁴ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Appendix I, No. 1.

⁵ Vide "Hindu Logic as preserved in China and Japan," by Dr. Sugiura, p. 30.

⁶ Vide Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," Vol. I, pp. 355-56. The three treatises are:—*Saptadaśabhūmiśāstra-yogācārya*, *Sūtrālaṅkāraṭīkā* and *Madhyānta vibhāga śāstra*.

⁷ It is perhaps this work which is called *Yoga* by Dr. Sugiura, vide its Chinese version Yuka Ron, Book XV.



short account of which is given below from the researches of Dr. Sugiura.¹

31. Maitreya mainly discussed the practical questions of Logic as is evident from the titles of some of the chapters of his work, viz.: (1) Of Kinds of Debate, (2) Of Occasions of Debate, (3) Of the Attributes of the Debator, (4) Of Defeat, etc. But occasionally there was mixed in with the discussions some Pure Logic too. A thesis [*pratiñā*], according to Maitreya, is to be supported by a reason [*hetu*] and two examples [*dṛṣṭānta*]. Validity of the reason and of the examples requires that they be based either (1) on fact [*pratyakṣa*], (2) on another inference [*anumāna*], or (3) on holy saying [*āgama*]. Analogy or Comparison [*upamāna*] is omitted. The form of reasoning is illustrated as follows :—

1. Sound is non-eternal,
2. Because it is a product,
3. Like a pot, but not like ether [*ākāśa*],
4. A product like a pot is non-eternal,
5. Whereas, an eternal thing like ether is not a product.

ĀRYA ASAṅGA (ABOUT 450 A.D.).

32. Asaṅga,² called in Chinese Mucak, was born in Gāndhāra (modern Peshwar). He was at first an adherent of the Mahīśāsaka³ sect and followed the *Vaibhāṣika* philosophy of the *Hīnayāna*. Later on he became a disciple of Maitreya and adopted the *Yogācāra* philosophy of the *Mahāyāna*. He is said to have lived for some years as a paṇḍita in Nālandā.⁴ He lived about 450 A.D.⁵ The latest date that can be assigned to him is 531 A.D.,⁶ when one of his works, called the *Mahāyāna-sampari-graha-śāstra*, was translated into Chinese. Hwen-thsang in the 7th century A.D. saw the ruins of *Saṅghārāmas* in Kauśāmbi and Ayodhyā, where Asaṅga resided for some years.⁷ He wrote 12 works, most of which still exist in Chinese and Tibetan versions.⁸

¹ Vide "Hindu Logic as preserved in China and Japan," p. 30.

² Vide Hwen-thsang's *Travel in Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World*, Vol. I, pp. 98, 227 and 236.

³ Vide Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," Vol. I, p. 357.

⁴ Vide Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 122.

⁵ Asaṅga is approximately placed at 450 A.D. as he was the eldest-brother of Vasubandhu (q.v.) who lived about 480 A.D.

⁶ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's *Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka*, Appendix I, No. 5.

⁷ See Beal's *Buddhist Records*, Vol. I, pp. 98, 227, 236.

⁸ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's *Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka*, Appendix I, no. 5.



33. Dr. Sugiura¹ has ascertained from Chinese sources that Asaṅga treated Logic in the tenth volume of *Genyo*, in which he simply reproduced the conclusions of his master Maitreya, and also in the sixteen volumes of *Zaschuh*, in which he showed a slight originality. Asaṅga's form of reasoning, which is somewhat different from Maitreya's, is given below :—

1. Sound is non-eternal,
2. Because it is a product,
3. Like a pot (but not like ether) ;
4. Because a pot is a product it is non-eternal ; so is sound, as it is a product :
5. Therefore we know sound is non-eternal.

Here we find that Asaṅga made some improvement on the form of syllogism adopted in the Logic of his master. The basis of Maitreya's inference, so far as it related to the connection between "produced-ness" and "non-eternality," was a mere analogy founded upon a single instance. This connection (between "produced-ness" and "non-eternality" in the case of the pot) might be accidental. Asaṅga emphasised the essential connection between "produced-ness" and "non-eternality" by saying "Because a pot is a product, it is non-eternal." In so doing he appealed not merely to an instance but to a law.

VASUBANDHU (ABOUT 480 A.D.).

34. Vasubandhu,² called in Chinese Seish, was born in Gāndhāra (modern Peshwar), where a tablet to his memory was seen by Hwen-thsang in the 7th century A.D. His father's name was Kauśika. He began his career as a *Vai-bhāṣika* philosopher of the Sarvāstivāda sect, but was later converted by his eldest brother Asaṅga to the *Yogācāra* school of the *Mahāyāna*. He passed many years of his life in Śākala, Kauśāmbi and Ayodhyā, in the last of which places he died at the age of eighty years. He was a friend of Manoratha, a master of the *Vaibhāṣika Sāstra*, who flourished in the middle of the thousand years after the *nirvāṇa* of Buddha, that is before 500 A.D. He was a contemporary of another *Vaibhāṣika*

The original Sanskrit text of Asaṅga's *Vajracchedikā* has been published in the *Anecdota Oxoniensia* edited by Professor Max Müller.

¹ Vide "Hindu Logic as preserved in China and Japan" by Dr. Sugiura, p. 31.

² Vide Hwen-thsang's *Travel in Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World*, Vol. I, pp. 98, 105, 172, 193, 225, 236 ; and Watters' "On Xuan Chwang," Vol. I, p. 210.



teacher, named Saṅghabhadra, who lived about 489 A.D.¹ So we may approximately fix the date of Vasubandhu at about 480 A.D. His biography² was translated from Sanskrit into Chinese during 557-569 A.D. Vasubandhu was the author of a large number of very valuable works³ including the *Tarka-śāstra*, which consists of three chapters and is perhaps the first regular Buddhist work on Logic. This work was translated into Chinese in 550 A.D. The Chinese version still exists, while the Sanskrit original has been long lost. The work appears to have been translated into Tibetan too, but my persistent efforts to discover the Tibetan version were unsuccessful.

35. Dr. Sugiura⁴ from Chinese sources has ascertained that in the 7th century A.D., while Hwen-thsang was in India, he saw three other books on Logic attributed to Vasubandhu, which are called in Chinese *Ronki*, *Ronshiki* and *Ronshin*, respectively. In the *Ronki*, quoted by Kwei-ke, Vasubandhu maintained that a thesis can be proved by two propositions only, and that, therefore, the necessary parts in a syllogistic inference are only three⁵ (i.e. *pakṣa* or minor term, *sādhya* or major term

¹ Saṅghabhadra translated *Vibhāṣā-vinaya* into Chinese in 489 A.D. *Vide* Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Appendix II, No. 95.

Mr. Takakusu, in a very learned article on Paramārtha's Life of Vasubandhu and the date of Vasubandhu published in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, January 1905, says that Saṅghabhadra, contemporary of Vasubandhu, was the translator of the *Samantapāsādikā* of Buddhaghosa into Chinese in 488 A.D.

² *Vide* Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Appendix I, No. 6. The statement that there was an older translation of the life of Vasubandhu by Kumārajīva A.D. 401-409 but that it was lost in 730 A.D., cannot be accepted without further testimony. Takakusu says that "some Catalogues mention by mistake that such a work was then in existence": *vide* Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, January 1905, p. 39.

³ *Vide* Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Appendix I, No. 6.

⁴ *Vide* Dr. Sugiura's "Hindu Logic as preserved in China and Japan," p. 32.

⁵ The Jaina logician Siddhasena Divākara probably refers to Vasubandhu, when he says that according to some logicians *antarvyāpti* (internal inseparable connection) consisting of *pakṣa* or minor term, *sādhya* or major term and *hetu* or middle term is quite enough in establishing a thesis, and that *dṛṣṭānta* or example is altogether useless. Siddhasena Divākara writes:—

अनव्याप्तिरपि साध्यस्य सिद्धेर्वैशिष्ट्यादिति ।

यथा ज्ञानदसङ्गावेऽप्येवं न्यायविदो विदुः ॥ ९० ॥

(*Nyāyāvatāra* of Siddhasena Divākara, edited by Satish Chandra Vidyabhusana and published by the Indian Research Society of Calcutta).



and *hetu* or middle term). But it is to be regretted that these three logical works are lost, and we cannot know how far the theory of syllogism was developed in them. The work in Chinese from which alone we can know anything of his Logic is his polemic against heresies (*Nyojits-ron*).¹ In this book he gives the following form of reasoning :—

1. Sound is non-eternal,
2. Because it is a product of a cause,
3. Things produced by a cause are non-eternal like a pot,
which is produced by a cause and is non-eternal ;
4. Sound is an instance of this (kind),
5. Therefore sound is non-eternal.

¹ Is this the same work as the *Tarka-sāstra* already referred to ?



CHAPTER II.

SYSTEMATIC BUDDHIST WRITERS ON LOGIC (500—1200 A.D.).

LOGIC DISTINGUISHED FROM PHILOSOPHY.

36. In the previous chapter we have seen that from the origin of Buddhism in the 6th century B.C. to its expansion into four philosophical schools in the 4th century A.D., there were no systematic Buddhist works on Logic, but only a few stray references to that science in the works on philosophy and religion. During 400—500 A.D., Maitreya, Asanga and Vasubandhu handled Logic, but their treatment of it was merely incidental, being mixed up with the problems of the *Yogācāra* and *Vaibhāsika* schools of philosophy. Vasubandhu's three works¹ on Pure Logic mentioned by Hwen-thsang are now lost and consequently their merits cannot be judged. With 500 A.D. began a period when Logic was completely differentiated from general philosophy, and a large number of Buddhist writers gave their undivided attention to that branch of learning. Dignāga is the earliest known writer of this period.

37. ĀCĀRYA DIGNĀGA—FATHER OF MEDIÆVAL LOGIC.

[Flourished in Andhra, modern Telingāna in the Madras Presidency,
about 500 A.D.]

The likeness of Dignāga reproduced in the next page is taken from the Tibetan Tangyur (Mdo, Ce, folio 1) which was put in its present form by the celebrated Lama Bu-ston, who passed the last days of his life at the monastery of *Sha-lu, twelve miles south-east of Tashi-lhun-po. Bu-ston, who lived early in the fourteenth century A.D.,² must have copied the likeness from some earlier specimen, which was taken to Tibet during her intercourse with India between 600 A.D. and 1200 A.D.

A peculiarity of this likeness is its cap. In the early Buddhist Church monks were not allowed to wear any head-dress (*vide* the Pātimokkha rules of the Vinaya Pitaka). With the introduction of Mahāyāna in the first century A.D. by Kaniṣka, a great change was effected in the dress of monks, and caps of various shapes were invented. The hat worn here is called Panchen-shwa-dmar³ or "Paṇḍita's red cap," with a pointed

¹ *Vide* Book II, Chapter I, under the head "Vasubandhu."

² *Vide* Sarat Chandra Das's Tibetan Dictionary, p. 870.

³ *Vide* Waddell's Lamaism, pp. 194—196.



peak and long lappets. The lappets of the cap were lengthened in proportion to the rank of the wearer.

It is not known when the "Pandita's cap" was first introduced. It is said to have been taken to Tibet in 749 A.D. by Sānta Raksita. "Pandita" was a degree which was conferred by the Vikramasīlā University on its successful candidates. It is not known what title the Uni-



བཟུན་འགྲུར་མདོ་ཅེ་གཅིག།
སྤྱི་བ་དཔོན་ཕྱོགས་སྒྲང་ལ་ན་མོ།།

versity of Nālandā conferred on its distinguished students. Perhaps in that university, too, the title "Pandita" was recognised, and "Pandita's cap" was possibly a distinctive badge of the scholars of that famous university where Dignāga distinguished himself in philosophical controversies.

• The woollen shawl worn here is indicative of the fact that after Bud-



dhism had spread into cold climes, monks like Brahmanic sages were allowed to put on suitable warm clothes. There is also in the palms of the image a thunderbolt called in Sanskrit *Vajra* and in Tibetan *Dorje*, which is a remover of all evils. The halo round the head of the image indicates that Dignāga was a saint.

LIFE OF DIGNĀGA (ABOUT 500 A.D.).

38. Dignāga or rather Ācārya Dignāga is called in Tibetan *Phyogs-glañ*. He¹ was born in a Brāhmaṇa family in *Simhāvakra* near *Kāñcī*, modern *Conjeeveram* in the *Madras Presidency*. By *Nāgadatta*, a *Paṇḍita* of the *Vātsīputriya* sect, he was admitted to the religious system of that sect and attained erudition in the *Tripitaka* of the *Hīnayāna*. Afterwards he became a disciple of Ācārya *Vasubandhu* with whom he studied all the *Piṭakas* of the *Mahāyāna* and *Hīnayāna*. He miraculously saw the face of *Mañjuśrī*, the Buddhist god of learning, from whom he received inspiration in the Law (*Dharma*). A few years later he was invited to *Nālandā* (*Vide* appendix A) where he defeated Brāhmaṇa *Sudurjaya* and other *Tirtha* dialecticians and won them to the doctrine of Buddha. Since he had refuted chiefly the *Tirtha* controversialists he was called the "Bull in discussion" (Sanskrit: *Tarkapuṅgava*, and Tibetan: *Rtsod-pahi-khyu-mchog*). He travelled through *Orissa* and *Mahārāṣṭra* to the south, meeting the *Tirtha* controversialists in discussions. At *Mahārāṣṭra* he is said to have resided frequently in the Ācāra's Monastery.² At *Orissa* he converted *Bhadra Pālita*, Treasury-minister of the king of the country, to Buddhism. He was a man of vast learning and wisdom, and practised during his life-time twelve tested virtues. He is said to have died in a solitary wood in *Orissa*.

39. Dignāga must have lived before 557—569 A.D.³ when two of his works were translated into Chinese. The early limit

¹ This account of Dignāga is taken from *Lama Tārānātha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 130—135. *Lama Tārānātha* also relates that Dignāga frequently resided in *Orissa* in a cavern of a mountain called *Bhoraśilā* where he used to give himself up to contemplation. He was specially versed in incantation formulas. It is stated that the stem of a myrobalan tree called *Muṣṭiharītakī* in the garden of *Bhadra Pālita* in *Orissa* entirely withered, but it revived in seven days after Dignāga had uttered incantation for its restoration. For a fuller account of Dignāga *vide* *Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's "Dignāga and his Pramāṇa-samuccaya"* in the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, Vol. I, No. 9, 1905.

² *Vide* *Watters' On Yuan Chwang*, Vol. II, p. 122.

³ *Vide* *Bynyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka*, App. I, No. 10, where Dignāga is called *Jina*. The Chinese name of Dignāga has been wrongly rendered as *Jina* by Japanese writers as well as *Rev. Beal*.



of his date in 480 A.D. when his teacher Vasubandhu lived. Dignāga flourished possibly about 500 A.D. when the Buddhist kings of the Pallava¹ dynasty ruled the eastern coast of Southern India.

40. We have already seen that Dignāga travelled in Nālandā, Orissa, Mahārāṣṭra and Dakṣiṇa (Madras) entering everywhere into disputes with controversialists. He attacked his opponents as frequently as he was attacked by them. His whole life was passed in giving blows and receiving counter-blows. On account of this love of discussion he was, during his life-time, called the "Bull in discussion" (*Tarka-puṅgava*).² Even his death did not terminate the great intellectual war in which he had been engaged: though he could no longer offer any violence, his opponents continued to fall upon him with force. Mark the volleys on his dead body coming from no mean warriors! Kālidāsa,³ the prince of poets, warns his poem to avoid the "rugged hand" (*sthūla-hasta*) of Dignāga. Udyotakara,⁴ the eminent logician, calls Dignāga "a quibbler" (*Kutārka*). Vācaspati Miśra⁵ describes him as "an erring one" (*bhrānta*) and speaks of his "blunders" (*bhrānti*). Mallinātha⁶ compares him with a "rock" (*adrikalpa*). Kumārila Bhaṭṭa and Pārtha sārathi Miśra⁷ turn their arrows against him. The

¹ On the downfall of the Andhras in 436 A.D., the Paṇḍya rose to power. They were in their turn driven out of their northern possessions, the kingdom of Veṅgi, by Kubja Viṇuvardhana of the Eastern Chalukya dynasty. During 552—580 A.D., Kāñcī, the capital of the Pallava king, was captured by Vikramāditya I. of the Western Chalukya dynasty. *Vide* Sewell's *Lists of Antiquities, Madras, Vol. II*, pp. 141, 146, 148, 149 and 211, 212.

² *Vide* Lama Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 134.

³ *Vide* Meghadūta, Pūrva-megha, verse 14.

४ यदक्षपादः प्रवरो मुनीनां

श्माय शस्त्रं जगती जगद् ।

कुनाकिंकाज्ञाननिवृत्तिहेतुः

करिष्यते तस्य मया निबन्धः ॥

Udyotakara's *Nyāya-vārtika*, Introductory stanza, p. 1, in the *Bibliotheca Indica* series. Compare also *Nyāya-vārtika*, 1-1-4, pp. 43—44; 1-1-5, p. 52; 1-1-5, pp. 60—61; 1-1-7, p. 63, etc.

⁵ *Vide* Vācaspati Miśra's *Nyāya-vārtika-tātparyā-tīkā*, edited by Gangadhar Sastri, 1-1-1, pp. 1, 31; 1-1-4, pp. 76—77, 97—98, 102; 1-1-5, p. 1-2; 1-1-6, p. 135, etc.

⁶ Mallinātha's commentary on verse 14 of the *Meghadūta*, Pūrva megha.

⁷ *Vide* Pārtha sārathi's gloss on 59—60, *Anumānapariccheda* of Kumārila Bhaṭṭa's *vārtika* on the 5th Sūtra of Jaimini.



Vedāntins and Jainas¹ were not inactive in their hostility. Even Dharmakīrti² the Buddhist sage attempted to oppose him. Dignāga must have been a very strongly built man, both physically and mentally, otherwise he could hardly have lived for a single day under assaults from so many sides. Those of his works which still exist enable us somehow to measure his strength and his weakness.

DIGNĀGA'S Pramāṇa-samuccaya.³

41. The Pramāṇa-samuccaya is one of the grandest literary monuments of Dignāga. It is said to have been composed while he was residing on a solitary hill near Veṅgi in Andhra⁴ (modern Telingāna) in the Madras Presidency. Seeing

¹ *Vide* the works of Prabhācandra and Vidyānanda referred to in the J.B.B.R.A.S., Vol. XVIII, p. 229. The Digambara Jaina logician Dharmabhūṣaṇa, in controverting the Vaiśeṣika doctrine of *Sāmānya*, generality, quotes in support of his own conclusion the following verse of Dignāga :—

न याति न च तबासौ न पश्चादस्ति नाशवत् ।

अदाति पूर्वं नाधारमदो यस्य न सन्नतिः ॥

इति दिग्नामदुषितदुषणमणप्रसरप्रज्ञात्

(Quoted in Dharmabhūṣaṇa's *Nyāya-dīpikā*, Chap. III).

The same verse has been quoted in a little altered form by the Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya as follows :—

न याति न च तबासौदस्ति पश्चाच्च नाशवत् ।

अदाति पूर्वं नाधारमदो यस्य न सन्नतिः ॥

(*Sarvadarāṇa saṁgraha*, chapter on Bauddhadarāṇa).

² *Vide* the head "Dharmakīrti" which follows.

³ The account of the composition of the Pramāṇa-samuccaya given here is taken from Lama Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 132, 133; and the Tibetan Pag-sam-jon-zang edited by Rai Sarat Chandra Das, Bahadur, C.I.E., pp. 62, 75, 100 and LXVII.

⁴ *Vide* Hwen-thsang's *Travel in Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World*, Vol. II, pp. 218, 219 and 220 where the Chinese term for Dignāga is wrongly rendered as Jina. Hwen-thsang gives the following account of the composition of the Pramāṇa-samuccaya :—"When Dignāga began to compose a useful compendium [presumably the Pramāṇa-samuccaya] for overcoming the difficulties of the Hetuvidyā-śāstra, the mountains and valleys shook and reverberated; the vapour and clouds changed their appearance, and the spirit of the mountain appeared before him, asking him to spread abroad the śāstra (Hetuvidyā). Then the Bodhisattva (Dignāga) caused a bright light to shine and illumine the dark places. Surprised at this wonder, the king of the country (Andhra) came near him and asked whether he was entering into *nirvāṇa*. When the king spoke of the infinite bliss of *nirvāṇa* Dignāga resolved to enter into it. Mañ-



that the Sāstras on Dialectics written earlier by him remained scattered about, he resolved to collect them. Accordingly, putting together fragments from particular works, he engaged himself in compiling in verse a compendium called the Pramāṇa-samuccaya. While he was writing the opening lines the earth

trembled and all the places were filled with light and a great tumult was audible. A Brāhmaṇa named Īśvara-kṛṣṇa¹ surprised at this wonder came to Ācārya Dignāga, and finding that he had gone out to collect alms, wiped out the words he had written. Dignāga came and rewrote the words and Īśvara-kṛṣṇa wiped them out again. Dignāga wrote them a third time and added: "Let no one wipe this out even in joke or sport, for none should wipe out what is of great importance; if the sense of the expression is not right, and one wishes to dispute on that account, let him appear before me in person." When after Dignāga had gone out to collect alms, the Brāhmaṇa again came to wipe out the writings he saw what was added and paused. The Ācārya returning from his rounds for meal met the Brāhmaṇa: they began controversy, either staking his own doctrine. When he had vanquished the Tīrtha (Brāhmaṇa) several times and challenged him to accept the Buddhist doctrine, the Tīrtha scattered ashes pronouncing incantations on them, and burnt all the goods of the Ācārya that happened to lie before him; and when the Ācārya was kept back by fire the Tīrtha ran away. Thereupon Dignāga reflected that since he could not work the salvation of this single individual, he would not be able to work that of others. So thinking he was on the point of giving up his purpose of compiling the Pramāṇa-samuccaya when the Bodhisattva Ārya Mañjuśrī miraculously appeared before him in person and said:—

"Son, refrain, refrain: the intellect is infected by arguing with mean persons. Please know that when you have demonstrated it this Sāstra cannot be injured by the host of Tīrthas. I undertake to be your spiritual tutor till you have attained the

juśrī, the god of learning, knowing his purpose was moved with pity. He came to Dignāga and said: "Alas! how have you given up your great purpose, and only fixed your mind on your own personal profit, with narrow aims, giving up the purpose of saving all." Saying this he directed him to explain the Yogācāryabhūmi-sāstra and Hetuvidyā-sāstra. Dignāga receiving these directions, respectfully assented and saluted the saint. Then he gave himself to profound study and explained the Hetuvidyā-sāstra and the Yoga discipline.

¹ Īśvarakṛṣṇa here referred to was very probably the author of the Sāṃkhya kārīkā.



stage of perfection. In later times this śāstra will become the sole eye of all the śāstras." ¹

So saying Mañjuśrī disappeared and Dignāga resumed his work and completed the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*.

42. The *Pramāṇa-samuccaya* ² is a Sanskrit work written in *anustubh* metre. The Sanskrit original of it is lost, but a Tibetan translation still exists. The translation was prepared by an Indian sage named Hema Varma (in Tibetan: Gser-gyi-go-cha) and a Tibetan interpreter named Dad-pahi-śeṣ-rab in the monastery of Seṣ-pahi-dge-gnas. It occupies folios 1—13 of the Tangyur, section Mdo, volume Ce. ³ In Tibetan it is called Tshad-maḥi-mdo-kun-laṣ-btuṣ-pa (= *Pramāṇa sūtra-samuccaya*) or briefly Tshad-ma-kun-laṣ-btuṣ-pa (= *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*) signifying a compilation of aphorisms on *Pramāṇa*, valid knowledge. It begins thus:—"Bowling down before Sugata—the teacher and protector—who is *Pramāṇa* incarnate, and benefactor of the world, I, for the sake of expounding *Pramāṇa* (valid knowledge), put together here various scattered matters, compiled from my own works." ⁴ In the closing lines

བྱ་མ་བྱེད་མ་བྱེད་སྒྲེ་བོད་མན་དང་འཕྲད་ལས་སྒྲོ་གྲོས་ངན་སྒྲེ་ལྟེ།
བྱེད་ཀྱི་བསྟན་ནས་འཛེས་འདི་ལ་སྒྲེ་བྱས་ཆོག་གིས་གནོད་མི་
ནུས་པར་ཤེས།

བྱེད་ཀྱིས་ས་ས་ཐོབ་ཀྱི་བར་དུ་དག་བའི་བཤེས་སྤང་འགྱུར་གྱི།
ཕྱི་མའི་དུས་སྤང་བསྟན་བཅོས་ཀུན་གྱི་མིག་གཅིག་དུ་ནི་འདི་འགྱུར་རོ།།

Pag-sam-jon-zang, edited by Rai Sarat Chandra Das, Bahadur, C.I.E., p. 101.

² Probably the same as "The Śāstra on the grouped inferences," vide Takakusu's *I-tsing*, p. 167.

³ The volume Ce of the Tangyur, section Mdo, was put at my disposal by the India Office, London, through Mr. Thomas.

ཚད་མར་གྱུར་པ་འགྲོ་ལ་པན་པར་བཞེད།
སྟོན་པ་བའི་གཤེགས་སྒྲོབ་ལ་ཕྱག་འཆམ་ནས།
ཚད་མ་སྒྲུབ་ཕྱིར་རང་གི་གནུང་ཀུན་ལས།
བདུས་དེ་སྤང་ཆོག་མ་འཐོར་ནམས་འདིར་གཅིག་བྱ།།

(Tangyur, Mdo, Ce, folio 1).



it is stated that "Dignāga, the subduer of controversialists in all regions and the possessor of elephantine strength, compiled this from his own works."¹

43. It is divided into six chapters which are named respectively: (1) Perception (Sanskrit: *Pratyakṣa*, Tibetan: *Mnon-sum*); (2) Inference for one's own self (Sanskrit: *Svārthānumāna*, Tibetan: *Ran-don-gyi-rje-lpag*); (3) Inference for the sake of others (Sanskrit: *Parārthānumāna*, Tibetan: *Gshan-gyi-don-gyi-rje-lpag*); (4) Three characteristics of the Middle Term (Sanskrit: *Tri-rūpa-hetu*, Tibetan: *Tshul-sum-gtan-tshigs*) and Rejection of Comparison (Sanskrit: *Upamāna-khaṇḍana*, Tibetan: *Dpe-dan-dpe-ltar-snañ-pa*); (5) Rejection of Credible Word or Verbal Testimony (Sanskrit: *Sabdānumānanirāsa*, Tibetan: *Sgra-rje-dpag-min*); and (6) Parts of a syllogism (Sanskrit: *Nyāyāvayava*, Tibetan: *Rigs-paḥi-yan-lag*).

44. Dignāga does not give any formal definition of Perception, which is well known as the knowledge of objects derived through the channels of the senses. But he describes Perception as that which is freed from illusory experiences and is unconnected with name, genus, etc.² Suppose a man in the twilight mistakes a rope for a snake: his experience of the snake is merely illusory

¹ ཕྱོགས་ནས་སྐུན་གྱི་པས་ཀྱི་ཚེལ་བ་ནས་ས།
འཛེས་ས་པར་བྱེད་པ་ཐྱང་པོ་འི་སྟོབས་ཐུན་པ།
ཕྱོགས་ཀྱི་ཐྱང་པོ་འི་གཞུང་ཀྱན་ལས་བདུས་པ།

(Tangyur, Mdo, Co, folio 13).

² In chapter I of the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*, Dignāga describes Perception as follows:—

མཛོན་སྤུམ་རྟོག་པ་དང་བྲལ་བ།
མིང་དང་རིགས་སོགས་མི་བསྐྱེས་པའོ།

The Sanskrit equivalents for these two lines are as follows:—

प्रत्यक्षं कल्पनापीडं
नामजात्या वसंयुतम् ॥

(*Pramāṇa-samuccaya*, chapter I).

The first of these lines has actually been quoted, and Dignāga's whole theory of Perception severely criticised, by the Hindu logician Udyotakara in his *Nyāya-vārtika*, 1-1-4.



and is not, according to Dignāga, an act of Perception. Dignāga contends that Perception is also not connected with name, genus, etc. Suppose I see a cow. This cow, which I see, is a peculiar one. Its infinite peculiarities can only be realised by me who have seen it. If I proceed to indicate this cow to other persons by saying that I saw a cow which is named *Dittha* or which is red, etc., I can only convey to those persons the idea of a cow of a certain class, that is, a cow possessing the common characteristics of a class of cows, but can never express to them the individual cow which I saw. Hence it follows that (a result of) Perception cannot be properly expressed by name, genus, etc. But very different is the case with inference. Knowledge derived through inference is general, and can be well expressed by name genus, etc., whereas that derived through Perception is particular, and is incapable of being properly communicated to others by name, genus, etc.

45. In the chapter on Perception Dignāga has criticised the Hindu logician Vātsyāyana, who concluded that the mind

(*manas*) was a sense-organ, because it was accepted as such in several systems of philosophy, and the view was not opposed in the Nyāya-sūtra according to the maxim "if I do not oppose a theory of my opponent¹ it is to be understood I approve of it." Dignāga criticises this maxim of Vātsyāyana saying: "if silence proved assent it was useless for the Nyāya-sūtra to mention other sense-organs."²

¹ Vātsyāyana writes:—

मनस इन्द्रियमाणाश्च वार्थं लक्षणात्तरमिति । तन्त्रान्तरसमाचाराच्चैतत्
प्रत्येतव्यमिति परमतमप्रतिषिद्धमनुमतमिति च तन्त्रयुक्तिः ।

(Nyāyabhāṣya, 1-1-4).

² Dignāga writes:—

བཀའ་པ་མེད་ཀྱི་རྩོམ་ཅེན།
དབང་པོ་བཀའ་ཅན་གྱི་སྒྲུ་དོན་མེད།།

(Pramāṇa-samuccaya, chapter I).

The Sanskrit originals of the lines are as follows:—

अनिश्चादुपासं चेत्
अन्येन्द्रियवत् इत्या ॥

(Pramāṇa-samuccaya, chapter I).

These two lines have been quoted and criticised by the Hindu logician Vācaspati Miśra in his Nyāya-vārtika-tātparyā-ṭīkā, 1-1-4.



46. In chapter II of the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*, Dignāga men-

• Inference.

tions the views of some logicians who from smoke, which is the middle term, infer *fire* which is inseparably connected with it, and also of others, who from smoke infer the connection between it and the hill which is the minor term. He argues against the first mentioned logicians saying that if they infer *fire* from smoke they gain no new knowledge from this inference, for it is already known that smoke is inseparably connected with fire. His argument against the other logicians is that they are not able to infer the *connection*, for connection implies two things, whereas here only one thing, *viz.*, the hill, is visible, but the other, *viz.*, fire, is not visible. What then do we really infer from smoke? Dignāga says it is not fire nor the connection between it and the hill, but it is the *fiery* hill that is inferred.¹

What Dignāga meant to say is:—

The *Nyāya-sūtra* distinctly mentions the eye, ear, nose, tongue and touch as sense-organs, but says nothing as to whether the mind (*manas*) is a sense-organ or not. The presumption from this silence is that the mind is not a sense-organ according to the *Nyāya-sūtra*.

But *Vātsyāyana*, the famous Hindu commentator on the *Nyāya-sūtra* interprets the silence in a quite different way, concluding therefrom that the mind (*manas*) is a sense-organ according to the *Nyāya-sūtra*.

Dignāga contends "if silence was a proof of assent why did the *Nyāya-sūtra* not remain silent regarding the other five sense-organs too?"

¹ Dignāga writes:—

དྲགས་ནི་འབྲུལ་བ་མེད་པའི་ཕྱིར།
ཁ་ཅིག་ཆེས་གཞན་དཔོག་ཅེས་ཟེར།
ཆེས་དང་ཆེས་ཅན་གྱུ་བ་པའི་ཕྱིར།
ཁ་ཅིག་འབྲུལ་བ་འདྲིད་པ་ཡིན།
ཆེས་ལ་དྲགས་ནི་གྱུ་བ་ཅན།
གཞན་དེས་ཅི་ཞིག་དཔག་པར་བྱེད།
ཅི་མྱོ་ཆེས་ཅན་ལ་དེ་ཉིད།
ཅི་ཕྱིར་ཇེས་སྟུ་དཔོག་མི་བྱེད།
འབྲུལ་པ་ལ་ཡང་གཉིས་པོ་མེད།



47. In chapter III, Dignāga says that an Inference for the sake of others consists in making explicit a matter which was inferred by one's own self.¹ In chapter IV, he rejects Comparison as a separate source of knowledge. He says that when we recognise a thing through Perception of a similar thing, we really perform an act of Perception. Hence Comparison or Recognition of Similarity is not a separate source of knowledge, but is included in Perception.² In chapter V, he rejects "Credible Word" or "Verbal Testimony" as a separate source of knowledge. He asks: "what is the significance of a Credible Word? Does it mean that the person who spoke the word is credible or the fact he averred is credible?" "If the person," continues Dignāga, "is credible, it is a mere infer-

དེ་ལྟ་ན་ལ་ནི་དུག་པ་བྱེས།
བརྗོད་མིན་དོན་གྱིས་གཟུང་པར་འགྱུར།
འདི་ལ་དྲགས་དང་འབྲེལ་མ་ཡིན།

(Pramāṇa-samuccaya, chapter II).

The Sanskrit originals of these lines are as follows:—

केचिद् धर्मान्तरं मेवं लिङ्गस्याप्यभिचारतः ।
संबन्धं केचिदिच्छन्ति लिङ्गत्वादसंबन्धिनीः ॥
लिङ्गं धर्मो प्रसिद्धं चेत् किमनन्तं तेन भीयते ।
अथ धर्मिणि तस्येव किमर्थं नानुमेयता ॥
संबन्धेऽपि द्रवं नास्ति बलं श्रूयते तद्वति ।
अवाच्योऽनुवृत्तीतत्वाच्च सो लिङ्गसंगतः ॥

(Pramāṇa-samuccaya, chapter II).

The Hindu logician Vācaspati Miśra has quoted and criticised these lines in the Nyāya-vārtika-tātparyā-ṭīkā, 1 1-5.

¹ Dignāga writes:—

གནན་གྱི་དོན་གྱི་ཆེས་དཔག་ནི།
རང་གིས་སྤོང་དོན་གསལ་བྱེད་ཡིན།
དེ་ལ་དཔག་བྱ་བལྟན་པ་ནི།

(Pramāṇa-samuccaya, chapter III).

² Vide a very interesting discussion on it in the Nyāya-vārtika, 1-1-6, where the Hindu logician Udyotakara defends the Nyāya-sūtra and the Nyāya-bhāṣya from the attacks of Dignāga.



ence. On the other hand if the fact is credible, it is a case of Perception." Hence Dignāga concludes that Credible Word or Verbal Testimony is not a separate source of knowledge, but is included in Perception and Inference.¹

DIGNĀGA'S Nyāya-praveśa.

48. The Nyāya-praveśa² or rather "Nyāya-praveśo-nāma pramāṇa prakaraṇa" is another excellent work on Logic by Dignāga. The Sanskrit original is lost. There exists a Tibetan translation of it which extends over folios 183—188 of the Tangyur, section Mdo, volume Ce. The translation was prepared by the great Kāśmīrian Pandita Sarvajña-śrī Rakṣita and the Sākya monk Grags-pa-rgyal-mtshan-dpal-bzañ, in the great Sa-śkyā monastery of Western Tibet. The work in Tibetan is called Tsha-l-ma-rigs-par-hjug-pahi-ngo signifying the "Door of Entrance to Logic." It opens thus:—

"Demonstration and refutation together with their fallacies are useful in arguing with others; and Perception and Inference together with their fallacies are useful for self-understanding; seeing these I compile this Sāstra."³

49. Some of the subjects discussed in the work are noticed below:—

• Parts of a Syllogism.⁴

¹ Vide Uḍyotakara's rejoinder in the Nyāya-vārtika 1-1-7.

² I consulted the Nyāya-praveśa from the volume Ce of the Tibetan Tangyur which was placed at my disposal by the India Office, London. I have also brought a copy of the Nyāya-praveśa from the monastery of Labrang in Sikkim which I visited in May 1907. This is probably the same as "Nyāya-dvāra-śāstra": Vide Takakusu's I-tsing, p. 186. and Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Nos. 1223 and 1224. Cf. Dr. Sugiura's "Hindu Logic as preserved in China and Japan," pp. 36, 60, where Śaṅkara Svāmīn's Nyāya-prāveśa-tarka-śāstra is noticed.

ཐུབ་པ་དང་ནི་སྤྲོད་པའི་ཉིད།
ལྟར་སྤང་བཅས་པ་གནས་ཉེགས་ཕྱིར།
མངོན་སྲུང་དང་ནི་ཐུག་སྤྲོད་པ།
ལྟར་སྤང་བཅས་པ་བདག་རིག་ཕྱིར།
ཅེས་པ་བསྟན་བཅོས་བསྐྱེད་པའོ།།

(Nyāya-praveśa).

⁴ In Tibetan; Rigs-pahi-yan-lag (རིགས་པའི་ཡན་ལག) and in Sanskrit: Nyāyāvayava (न्यायवयव)।



Reasoning, according to the Nyāya-praveśa, is carried on by means of a minor term, a major term, a middle term and two examples. The minor term is also called the subject (in Sanskrit: *pakṣa* or *dharmin*, and in Tibetan phyogs or choṣ-can). The major term is otherwise called the predicate (in Sanskrit: *sādhya* or *dharma*, in Tibetan: *bsgrub-par-bya* or choṣ). The middle term is also called the reason or mark (in Sanskrit: *hetu*, *liṅga* or *sādhana*, in Tibetan: *gtan-tshigs* or *bsgrub-par-byed*). The example (called in Sanskrit: *drṣṭānta*, in Tibetan: *dpe-brjod*) is of two kinds, viz., (1) homogeneous (in Sanskrit: *sādharmya*, in Tibetan: *choṣ-uthun-pa*) and (2) heterogeneous (in Sanskrit: *vaidharmya*, in Tibetan: *choṣ-mi-mthun-pa*).

Form of a Syllogism.

50. The form of reasoning is as follows:—

- (1) This hill is fiery.
- (2) Because it has smoke,
- (3) All that has smoke is fiery like a kitchen and whatever is not fiery has no smoke like a lake.

Here 'hill' is the minor term, 'fiery' the major term, 'smoke' the middle term, 'kitchen' a homogeneous example and 'lake' a heterogeneous example.

Thesis.

51. A minor term and a major term linked together constitute a proposition, e.g.

The *hill* (minor term) is *fiery* (major term).

A proposition which is offered for proof is a Thesis.

52. There are certain types of thesis which cannot stand the test of proof and are therefore fallacious.

The following theses are fallacious:—

(1) A thesis incompatible with perception, such as: "sound is inaudible."

(2) A thesis incompatible with inference, such as: "A pot is eternal."

(Really "A pot is non-eternal because it is a product.")

(3) A thesis incompatible with the public opinion, such as: "Man's head is pure, because it is the limb of an animate being." (Or money is an abominable thing. I or some men like me may say "money is an abominable thing," but the world does not say so).

¹ In Tibetan: *phyogs-ltar-gnañ* (ཤུགས་ལྟར་གྲུབ་) : in Sanskrit: *pakṣābhāsa* (पक्षाभास) ।



(4) A thesis incompatible with one's own belief or doctrine, such as : A Vaiśeṣika philosopher saying " sound is eternal."

(5) A thesis incompatible with one's own statement such as : " My mother is barren."

(6) A thesis with an unfamiliar minor term, such as : The Buddhist speaking to the Sāṃkhya, " Sound is perishable." (Sound is a subject well known to the Mīmāṃsaka, but not to the Sāṃkhya).

(7) A thesis with an unfamiliar major term, such as : The Sāṃkhya speaking to the Buddhist, " The soul is animate."

(8) A thesis with both the terms unfamiliar, such as : The Vaiśeṣika speaking to the Buddhist, " The soul has feelings as pleasurable, etc."

(The Buddhist neither deals with the soul nor with its feelings).

(9) A thesis universally accepted, such as : " Fire is warm." (This thesis cannot be offered for proof as it is accepted by all.

Three Characteristics of the Middle Term.¹ 53. The Middle Term (Hetu) must possess three characteristics, viz. :—

(1) The whole of the minor term (pakṣa) must be connected with the middle term, *e.g.*

Sound is non-eternal,
Because it is a product,
Like a pot but unlike ether.

In this reasoning "product" which is the middle term includes the whole of "sound" which is the minor term.

(2) All things denoted by the middle term must be homogeneous with things denoted by the major term, *e.g.*

All things produced are non-eternal as a pot.

(3) None of the things heterogeneous from the major term must be a thing denoted by the middle term, *e.g.*

No non-non-eternal (that is, no eternal) thing is a product, as ether.

54. If we suppose the minor term or subject to be 'S,' the middle term or reason to be 'R,' and the major term or predicate to be 'P,' then the above-mentioned three characteristics of the middle term may be symbolically set forth as follows :—

- (1) All S is R.
- (2) All R is P.
- (3) No R is non-P.

¹ Called in Tibetan : Gtan-tshigs-ni-tshul-gsum (གྲན་མཁོ་གསུམ་ནི་ཚུལ་

གསུམ) and in Sanskrit : Liṅgasya trairūpyam (लिङ्गस्य त्रैरूप्यम्) ।



Now, the negative aspect of the middle term, viz., no R is non-P only confirms the truth conveyed by one of the positive aspects, viz., all R is P. Hence we may put aside the negative aspect, and exhibit the positive aspects as follows :—

- (1) All S is R.
- (2) All R is P.

Again, in the above instance 'R' and 'P' may be taken in their whole extent or partially. So the two positive aspects mentioned above may be fully exhibited as follows :—

- (1) (a) All S is all R.
(b) All S is some R.
- (2) (a) All R is all P.
(b) All R is some P.

Combining aspect (1) and aspect (2) together we find that a syllogism may be of any one of the following forms :—

- (1) All S is all P (conclusion) :
Because All S is all R,
All R is all P.
- (2) All S is some P (conclusion) :
Because All S is all R,
All R is some P.
- (3) All S is some P (conclusion) :
Because All S is some R,
All R is all P.
- (4) All S is some P (conclusion) :
Because All S is some R,
All R is some P.

Hence we find that Dignāga admits only two conclusions, viz.
All S is all P, and
All S is some P.

55. The second and third of the characteristics mentioned above indicate the relative extension of the middle term and major term. They show that the middle term is universally or inseparably connected with the major term. This universal or inseparable connection between them is called in Sanskrit *Vyāpti* and in Tibetan *Khyab* which was, as far as I find, first discovered by Dignāga.

Supposing that the middle term or reason is R, and the major term or predicate is P, the connection between the two terms may be symbolically set forth as follows :—

- (1) All R is all P, and
- (2) All R is some P.



36. Owing to the violation of one or more of the three characteristics, there occur Fallacies of the Middle Term.¹ the Middle Term which may be of fourteen kinds as follows :—

A. The *unproved* (Sanskrit : Asiddha, Tibetan : Ma-grub) which occurs :

(1) When the lack of truth of the middle term is recognised by both the parties, *e.g.*

Sound is non-eternal,
Because it is *visible*.

(Neither of the parties admits that sound is visible).

(2) When the lack of truth of the middle term is recognised by one party only, *e.g.*

Sound is evolved,
Because it is a *product*.

(The Mimāṃsakas do not admit that sound is a product).

(3) When the truth of the middle term is questioned, *e.g.*

The hill is fiery,
Because there is *vapour*.

(Vapour may or may not be an effect of fire and may or may not be connected with it otherwise).

(4) When it is questioned whether the minor term is predicable of the middle term, *e.g.*

Ether is a substance,
Because it has qualities.

(It is questioned whether ether has qualities).

B. The *uncertain* (Sanskrit : Aniscita, Tibetan : Ma-ñeḡ-pa) which occurs :

(5) When the middle term is too general, abiding equally in the major term as well as in the opposite of it, *e.g.*

Sound is eternal,
Because it is *knowable*.

(The 'knowable' is too general because it abides in the eternal as well as the non-eternal. This is a fallacy of being too general, called in Sanskrit : *Sādhāraṇa* and in Tibetan : *Thun-moñ*).

(6) When the middle term is not general enough, abiding neither in the major term nor in its opposite, *e.g.*

¹ In Tibetan : Gtan-tshigs-ltar-nañ (གནད་ཅིང་གསུང་རྒྱུ་) and in

Sanskrit : Hetvābhāsa (हेतुभास) ।



Sound is eternal,
Because it is audible.

10 (This is a fallacy of being not general enough, called in Sanskrit : *Asādhāraṇa*, and in Tibetan : Thun-moñ-ma-yin).

(7) When the middle term abides in some of the things homogeneous with, and in all things heterogeneous from, the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is not a product of effort,
Because it is *non-eternal*.

(The non-eternal abides in some of the things which are not products of effort, such as lightning, and abides in all things which are not non-products of effort).

(8) When the middle term abides in some of the things heterogeneous from, and in all things homogeneous with, the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is a product of effort,
Because it is non-eternal.

(The non-eternal abides in some of the things which are not products of effort, as lightning, and abides in all things which are products of effort).

(9) When the middle term abides, in some of the things homogeneous with and in some heterogeneous from, the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal.

(Some incorporeal things are eternal as ether, but others are not as intelligence).

(10) When there is a non-erroneous contradiction, that is, when a thesis and its contradictory are both supported by what appear to be valid reasons, *e.g.*

The Vaiśeṣika speaking to the Mīmāṃsaka :

“ Sound is non-eternal,
Because it is a product.”

The Mīmāṃsaka speaking to the Vaiśeṣika :

“ Sound is eternal,
Because it is always audible.”

(Both of the reasonings are correct, but as they lead to contradictory conclusions they are classed as *uncertain*).

C. The contradictory (Sanskrit : *Viruddha*, Tibetan : *Hgal-wa*) which occurs :



- (11) When the middle term is contradictory to the major term,
e.g., Sound is eternal,
 Because it is a product.

(Product is inconsistent with eternal).

- (12) When the middle term is contradictory to the implied major term, *e.g.*

The eyes, etc., are serviceable to some being,
 Because they are made of particles,
 Like a bed, seat, etc.¹

(Here the major term "serviceable to some being" is ambiguous, for, the apparent meaning of 'some being' is 'the body,' but the implied meaning of it is 'the soul.' Though things 'made of particles' are serviceable to the body, they are not, according to the Sāṃkhya, serviceable to the soul which is attributeless. Hence there is contradiction between the middle term and the implied major term).

- (13) When the middle term is inconsistent with the minor term, *e.g.*

Sāmānya (generality) is neither substance, quality, nor action;

- Because it depends upon one substance and possesses quality and action.

(*Sāmānya* or generality does not depend upon one substance, etc.)

- (14) When the middle term is inconsistent with the implied minor term, *e.g.*

Objects are stimuli of action;

Because they are apprehended by the senses.

("Objects" is ambiguous meaning (1) things and (2) purposes. The middle term is inconsistent with the minor term in the second meaning).

Dignāga's theory of examples. Examples converted to universal proposition.

57. An example before the time of Dignāga served as a mere familiar case which was cited to help the understanding of the listner, *e.g.*

The hill is fiery,
 Because it has smoke,
 Like a kitchen (example).

Asaṅga (q.v.) made the example more serviceable to reasoning, but Dignāga converted it into a universal proposition, that

¹ This example may lead us to presume that the author of Nyāya-praveśa knew Īśvara Kṛṣṇa's Sāṃkhya-kārikā which is the oldest of the works on Sāṃkhya philosophy that have come down to us.



is a proposition ¹ expressive of the universal or inseparable connection between the middle term and the major term, *e.g.*

The hill is fiery ;

Because it has smoke ;

All that has smoke is fiery as a kitchen (homogeneous example).

The above example is homogeneous. A heterogeneous example is thus given :—

Whatever is not fiery has no smoke as a lake.

58. Examples have already been stated to be of two kinds, *viz.*, 1. Homogeneous and 2. Heterogeneous. Each of these kinds becomes fallacious under certain circumstances.

Fallacies of the homogeneous example are the following :—

(1) An example not homogeneous with the middle term, *e.g.*

Sound is eternal,

Because it is incorporeal,

That which is incorporeal is eternal as the atoms.

(The atoms cannot serve as an example because they are not incorporeal. This is called a fallacy of the Excluded Middle Term).

(2) An example not homogeneous with the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is eternal,

Because it is incorporeal,

That which is incorporeal is eternal as intelligence.

(Intelligence cannot serve as an example because it is not eternal. This is called a fallacy of the Excluded Major Term).

(3) An example homogeneous with neither the middle term nor the major term, *e.g.*

¹ The universal proposition, that is, the proposition expressive of the universal relation between the middle term and the major term, serves as the major premise in a syllogism of the celebrated Greek logician Aristotle. It was long unknown in India. Dignāga's discovery of the universal proposition marks a new era in the history of Indian Logic and shows a great development of the principle of induction first apprehended by Asaṅga in India.

² Called in Tibetan: *Chos-gdthun-dpe-ltar-gnañ-wa* (ཆོས་མགུན་དཔེ་

ལྟར་སྟངས་) and in Sanskrit: *Sādharmya-dṛṣṭāntābhāsa* (साधर्म्य-
दृष्टान्ताभास).



Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal,
That which is incorporeal is eternal, as a pot.

(The pot cannot serve as an example because it is neither incorporeal nor eternal. This is called a fallacy of the Excluded Middle and Major Terms).

(4) A homogeneous example showing a lack of universal connection between the middle term and the major term, *e.g.*

This person is passionate,
Because he is a speaker,
Whoever is a speaker is passionate, as a certain man in Magadha.

(Though a certain man in Magadha may be both speaker and passionate, there is nevertheless no universal connection between being a speaker and being passionate. This is a fallacy of Absence of Connection called in Sanskrit : Ananvaya, in Tibetan : Rjes-su-hgro-wa-med).

(5) A homogeneous example showing an inverse connection between the middle term and the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is non-eternal,
Because it is a product of effort,
Whatever is non-eternal is a product of effort, as a pot.

(The pot cannot serve as an example because though it is both non-eternal and a product of effort, the connection between the major term and the middle term has been inverted, *i.e.*, all products of effort are non-eternal; but all non-eternals are not products of effort. This is a fallacy of Inverse Connection called in Sanskrit : Viparītānvaya, in Tibetan : Rjes-su-hgro-wa-phyin-ci-log-pa).

Fallacy of the heterogeneous example.¹

59. Fallacies of the heterogeneous example are the following :—

(6) An example not heterogeneous from the opposite of the middle term, *e.g.*

Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal,
Whatever is non-eternal is not incorporeal, as intelligence.

¹ Called in Tibetan : Chos-mi-mthun-dpe-ltar--nañ-wa (ཆོས་མི་མཐུན་

དཔེ་ལྟར་སྒྲུབ་). and in Sanskrit : Vaidharmya-dṛṣṭāntābhāsa (वैधर्म्य-दृष्टान्ताभास) .



(Intelligence is non-eternal, yet incorporeal. This is a fallacy of Included Middle Term in a heterogeneous example).

(7) An example not heterogeneous from the opposite of the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal,
Whatever is non-eternal is not incorporeal, as atoms.

(The atoms are not incorporeal yet they are eternal. This is a fallacy of Included Major Term in a heterogeneous example).

(8) An example heterogeneous from neither the opposite of the middle term nor the opposite of the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal,
Whatever is non-eternal is not incorporeal, as a pot.

(A pot is neither eternal nor incorporeal. This is called a fallacy of Included Middle and Major Terms in a heterogeneous example).

(9) A heterogeneous example showing an absence of disconnection between the middle term and the major term, *e.g.*

This person is passionate,
Because he is a speaker,
Whoever is non-passionate is not a speaker, as a piece of stone.

(This is called a fallacy of Absence of Disconnection of a heterogeneous example).

(10) A heterogeneous example showing an absence of inverse disconnection between the middle term and the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is non-eternal,
Because it is a product,
Whatever is non-product is not non-eternal, as ether.

The example should be inverted as :

Whatever is non-non-eternal, *i.e.*, eternal, is not a product, as ether. This is called a fallacy of Inverted Negation of a heterogeneous example.

60. All the three kinds of fallacies—of the Thesis, Middle Term and Example—are fallacies of reasoning. Refutation (called in Sanskrit : *Dūṣaṇa* and in Tibetan : *Ṣun-hbyin*) consists in finding out in the reasoning of the opponent any one of the fallacies aforementioned. Fallacy of Refutation (called in



Sanskrit : Dūṣaṇābhāsa and in Tibetan : Sun-hbyin-ltar-snaa-wa) consists in alleging a fallacy where there is no fallacy at all.

61. Perception and Inference are the two kinds of valid knowledge for one's own self. Perception (called in Sanskrit : Pratyakṣa, and in Tibetan : Māon-sum) is knowledge derived through the senses. It is free from illusory experiences and is not connected with name, genus, etc. Inference called in Sanskrit : Anumāna and in Tibetan : Rjes-su-dpag is the knowledge of objects derived through a mark (Tibetan : Rtags) or middle term which has three characteristics. There are Fallacies of Perception as well as of Inference (called respectively Pratyakṣābhāsa and Anumānābhāsa in Sanskrit, and Māon-sum-ltar-naa and Rjes-dpag-ltar-snaa in Tibetan).

DIGNĀGA'S Hetu-cakra-hamaru.

62. The Hetu-cakra-hamaru¹ is another small treatise on Logic by Dignāga. The Sanskrit original is lost, but a Tibetan translation is preserved in the Tangyur, section Mdo, folios 193-194. The Tibetan translation was prepared by the sage Bodhisattva of Za-hor and the Bhikṣu Dharmāsoka. The work in Tibetan is called Gtan-tshigs-kyi-hkhor-lo-gtan-la-dwab-pa, signifying "the Wheel of Reasons put in order." It begins thus :—

"Bowing down to the Omniscient One (Buddha), who has destroyed the net of errors, I explain the system of three characteristics of the Reason (or Middle Term)."²

In this work Dignāga has analysed all nine possible relations between the middle and the major terms and has found that there

¹ I brought a copy of the Tibetan version of the Hetu-cakra-hamaru from the monastery of Labrang in Sikkim which I visited in June 1907. This work is probably the same as the Hetu-dvāra-śāstra : vide Takakusu's I-tsing, p. 187.

འབྲུག་པའི་བླ་མ་འཛོམས་མཛད་པའི།
 ཐམས་ཅད་མཁྱིན་ལ་བྱུག་འཛམ་མས།
 བཏན་ཆོག་ས་ཚུལ་གསུམ་ཁོ་བོ་ཡི།
 བཏན་ལ་དབབ་པ་བཤད་པར་བྱ།

(Hetu-chakra-hamaru).



are among them two relations which conform to the three characteristics of the middle term already laid down, and the remaining seven relations are at variance with those characteristics. Accordingly he has concluded that only two relations are valid as will be evident from the annexed diagram.

OTHER WORKS OF DIGNĀGA.

Pramāṇa-samuccaya-vṛtti.

65. The *Pramāṇa-samuccaya-vṛtti* is a commentary on the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya* by Dignāga himself. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ which extends over folios 13—96 of the Tangyur, section Mdo, volume Ce. The Tibetan translation was prepared, at the command of king Rigs-ldan-rgyal-po, by the famous Indian sage Vasudhara Rakṣita, who was as it were the crest-gem of logicians, and the Tibetan interpreter Sha-ma-dge-bṣñen-sin-rgyal. In Tibetan it is called Tshaḍ-ma-kun-laṣ-btuṣ-paḥi-hgrel-wa. It is divided into six chapters corresponding to those of the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya* itself. At the end of the work it is stated that "led on by the command of Mañjunātha (the god of learning), Dignāga the great dialectician of sharp intellect wrote this śāstra which is as deep as the ocean."

66. There is another translation of the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya-vṛtti* in Tibetan extending over folios 96—180 of the Tangyur, section Mdo, volume Ce. It was prepared by the Indian sage Hema Varma (called in Tibetan Gser-gyi-go-cha) and the Tibetan interpreter Dad-pa-seṣ-rab in the monastery of Si-waḥi-dge-gnas.

Pramāṇa-śāstra-praveśa.

67. *Pramāṇa-śāstra-praveśa*² is another work by Dignāga. It was translated into Chinese by the Chinese interpreter Tha-sam-tsan. The Chinese version was translated into Tibetan by the Chinese scholar Dge-seṣ-sin-gyañ and the Tibetan monk Ston-gshon in the Saṅkya monastery of Western Tibet. The Sanskrit original of the work appears to be lost, but the Tibetan version still exists. It consists of folios 188—193 of the Tangyur, section Mdo, volume Ce. In Tibetan the work is called Tshaḍ-maḥi-bstan-bcos-rig-pa-la-bjug-pa signifying "An Entrance to the Science of Logic."

¹ I have consulted the Tibetan xylograph of this work in the possession of the India Office, London.

² I have consulted the Tibetan xylograph of this work in the possession of the India Office, London.



Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā.

68. The *Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā*¹ is another work by Dignāga. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation which consists of one folio only (folio 180) of the Tangyur, section Mdo, volume Ce. The work in Tibetan is called *Dmigs-pa-brtag-pa* signifying "An Examination of the Objects of Thought." It begins with an invocation to Buddha and all Bodhisattvas.

Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā-vṛtti.

69. The *Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā-vṛtti*² is a commentary on the *Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā* by Dignāga himself. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan version which is embodied in the Tangyur, section Mdo, volume Ce, folios 180—182. The work in Tibetan is called *Dmigs-pa-brtag-paḥi-hgrel*.

Trikāla-parīkṣā.

70. The *Trikāla-parīkṣā*³ is a work by Dignāga. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan version in the Tangyur, section Mdo, volume Ce, folios 182—183. This version was prepared by the great Paṇḍita Śāntakara Gupta and the interpreter-monk Tshul-hkhrims-rgyal-mtshan. The work in Tibetan is called *Dus-gsum-brtag-pa* signifying "An Examination of Three Times."

ŚAṆKARA SVĀMIN (ABOUT 550 A.D.).

71. Śaṅkara Svāmin,⁴ as it appears from Chinese records, was a pupil of Dignāga. He seems to have been a native of Southern India. Logic is said to have been handed down by Dignāga through Śaṅkara Svāmin and ten other masters to Śīlabhadra, who was the head of the Nālandā University, and the favourite teacher of the Chinese pilgrim Hwen-thsang in

¹ I have consulted the Tibetan xylograph of this work as contained in the India Office, London. This is probably the same as "*Ālambaṇa-pratyaya-dhyāna-śāstra*": vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, No. 1173, and Takakusu's I-tsing, p. 188.

² I have consulted the xylograph of this work as contained in the India Office, London.

³ I have consulted the Tibetan xylograph of this work as contained in the India Office, London. This work is probably the same that is called by Takakusu "*The Śāstra on the Meditation of the Three Worlds*": vide Takakusu's I-tsing, p. 187. The "worlds" is evidently a mistake for "times."

⁴ Vide Dr. Sugiura's Hindu Logic as preserved in China and Japan, pp. 36, 37.



635 A.D. According to the Chinese Tripitaka Śaṅkara Svāmin was the author of a work called Nyāya-praveśa Tarka-śāstra,¹ which was translated into Chinese by Hwen-thsang in 647 A.D. This work seems to be different² from the "Nyāya-praveśa" or more fully the "Nyāya-praveśo nāma pramāṇa-prakaraṇa" which, as we have seen, is ascribed by the Tibetans to Dignāga.

DHARMAPĀLA (ABOUT 600—635 A.D.).

72. Dharmapāla,³ a logician, was a native of Kāñcīpura in Drāviḍa (modern Conjeeveram in Madras). He was the eldest son of a great minister of the country. From his childhood he exhibited much cleverness, and as he was a young man the king and queen of the country condescended to entertain him at a feast. In the evening of that day his heart was oppressed with sorrow, and assuming the robes of a Buddhist recluse he left home, and applied himself with unflagging earnestness to learning. He was admitted into the University at Nālandā (*vide* Appendix A) in which he acquired great distinction. Subsequently he became the head of the University. He must have retired from Nālandā before 635 A.D., when Hwen-thsang visited it, and found that Śīlabhadra had succeeded him in the headship of the University. Dharmapāla conjointly with Bhartṛhari composed a Beḍā vṛtti on Pāṇini's grammar.

73. He was a follower of the Yogācāra philosophy and was the author of several works such as (1) Ālambāṇa-pratyaya-dhyāna-śāstra-vyākhyā; (2) Vidvāmātra-siddhi-śāstra-vyākhyā; and (3) Sata-śāstra-vaipulya-vyākhyā which was translated into Chinese in 650 A.D. Hwen-thsang, who visited India in 629 A.D., found in Kauśāmbī the ruins of a monastery where Dharmapāla had refuted the arguments of the heretics.

ĀCĀRYA ŚĪLABHADRA (635 A.D.).

74. Śīlabhadra⁴ belonged to the family of the king of Samatāṭa (Bengal), and was of the Brāhmaṇa caste. He was a pupil

¹ *Vide* Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, no. 1216, and Appendix I, No. 13.

² The Tibetans do not know Śaṅkara Svāmin at all. The Chinese pilgrim I-tsing, who visited India during 671—695, speaks of Dignāga and Dharmakīrti, but does not mention Śaṅkara Svāmin. Even Hwen-thsang in his Travel does not mention him.

³ *Vide* Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World, vol. 1, p. 237; vol. 11, pp. 110—223, 229 and 230. *Vide* also Takakusu's I-tsing, p. lvii, and Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Appendix I, No. 16.

⁴ *Vide* Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World; vol. 11, p. 110; and Takakusu's I-tsing, p. 181.



of Dharmapāla at the Nālandā University (*vide* Appendix A) of which subsequently he became the head. The Chinese pilgrim Hwen-thsang was his pupil¹ in 635 A.D. Śīlabhadra was a great logician and master of śāstras.

ĀCĀRYA DHARMAKĪRTI (ABOUT 635—650 A.D.).

75. The excellent Dharmakīrti,² called in Tibetan Chog-grags, according to the accounts of all earlier sages, was born in the south in the kingdom of Cūḍāmaṇi.³ Since, however, there is now no country by that name, and since on the other hand all the orthodox and heterodox alike name Trimalaya as the birth-place of Dharmakīrti, it is to be accepted that in olden times Trimalaya was called the kingdom of Cūḍāmaṇi. His father was a Tirtha of the Brāhmaṇa caste, Parivrājaka Koru-nanda by name. Endowed from childhood up with a very keen intellect he attained to great skill in the fine arts, in the Vedas and Vedāṅgas, in the art of healing, in grammar, and in all the theories of the Tirthas. When only sixteen or eighteen years old, he was already deeply versed in the philosophy of the Tirthas. Occasionally he attended lectures of the Buddhists, and realised that the teachings of Buddha were without faults. There grew up in him a strong inclination towards Buddhism. He donned the dress of a Buddhist Upāsaka (devotee). When the Brāhmaṇas inquired the reason of this he praised the excellence of Buddhism for which he was out-casted. Thereupon he came to Madhyadeśa⁴ (Magadha), was received into the Saṅgha (priesthood) by Ācārya Dharmapāla, attained to great learning in the three Piṭakas, and knew in all 500 sūtras and dhāraṇīs by heart.

76. Dharmakīrti desiring to become acquainted with the

¹ *Vide* Takakusu's I-tsing, p. xlv.

² This account is taken from Lama Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 175—185.

³ Cūḍāmaṇi is probably the same as Coda or Chola country in the Eastern Deccan. As a fact Dharmakīrti was born in the Deccan: *Vide* article 82 under *Pramāṇa-vārtika kārīkā*.

⁴ In Tibetan literature Madhya-deśa signifies Magadha (Behar). But Manu defines Madhya-deśa as the country lying between the Himalayas on the north, the Vindhya mountains on the south, Prayāga in the east, and the river Sarasvatī on the west:

दिमवद्विन्ध्ययोर्मध्यं यत् प्राग् विनशनादपि ।

प्रत्यगेव प्रयागाच्च मध्यदेशः प्रकीर्तितः ॥

(Manusamhitā 2 : 21).

In this connection *vide* a very learned article named "Note on the Middle Country of Ancient India" by Rhys Davids in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, January 1904.



secret doctrine of the Tirtha system, donned a slave-attire and went southward. On inquiring who was versed in the Tirtha system, he was informed that the Brāhmaṇa Kumārila was an incomparable master of the same. The assertion that Kumārila was an uncle of Dharmakīrti is unsupported by Indian authority. Kumārila had received a large fortune from his king, owned many rice-fields, five hundred male slaves and five hundred female slaves and many hundred men. When Dharmakīrti after entering their service performed the work of fifty slaves indoors and outdoors, Kumārila and his wife were satisfied. They allowed him to hear the secret doctrines. Obtaining knowledge of the secret teaching from Kumārila, he left his house. With the wages which he received from Kumārila for his special services he gave a great feast to the Brāhmaṇas in the night of his departure.

77. Thereupon he challenged the followers of the system of Kaṇāda named Kaṇāda Gupta and other followers of the Tirtha system and entered upon debates with them. The debates lasted for three months, during which he withstood all his opponents and converted many of them to Buddhism. Upon this Kumārila was enraged and appeared with 500 Brāhmaṇas for debate. He proposed the condition that whoever was defeated should be killed. Dharmakīrti who did not desire the death of Kumārila induced the latter to enter upon the condition that whoever was defeated should accept the doctrine of the winner. Putting *Dharma* (doctrine) up as the prize they began the debate, and finally Dharmakīrti was victorious. Kumārila and his 500 followers became followers of Buddha.

78. Dharmakīrti further withstood the Nirgranthas (Jainas), Rāhuvratins and others, who lived within the range of the Vindhya mountains. Returning to Dravali (Drāviḍa?) he challenged by criers those who were ready for debate. The majority of the Tirthas fled; and some actually confessed that they were not equal to the fight. He re-established all the religious schools that had fallen into decay in that country, and lived in the loneliness of the forest given up to meditation.

79. Dharmakīrti towards the end of his life erected a viḥāra in the land of Kaliṅga, and after having converted many people to the Law (*Dharma*) passed away. Those of his pupils, who by their lives had become like Brahma, carried him to the cemetery for cremation. Then there fell a heavy rain of flowers, and for seven days the whole country was filled with fragrance and music.

80. This Ācārya (Dharmakīrti) and the Tibetan king Sroṅ-tsan-gam-po are said to have been contemporaries, which statement might be accepted as authoritative.



81. From this account it is evident that Dharmakīrti was a pupil of Dharmapāla. As the latter lived in 635 A.D., Dharmakīrti must also have lived about that time. This date agrees well with the statement that Dharmakīrti was a contemporary of the Tibetan king Sron-tsan-gam-po who lived during 627—698 A.D.¹ It seems that in 635 A.D., Dharmakīrti was very young as Hwen-thsang does not mention him. On the other hand I-tsing, who travelled over India during 671—695 A.D., declares eloquently how “Dharmakīrti made further improvement in Logic”² after Dignāga. The Brāhmanic logician Udyotakara³ is attacked by Dharmakīrti. The Mīmāṃsaka Sureśvarācārya,⁴ author of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka-vārtika, and the Digambara Jaina Vidyānanda, author of the Aṣṭa-sāhasrikā,⁵ have on the contrary criticised the definition of perception (*Pratyakṣa*) as given by Dharmakīrti, who is some times designated by the shorter name Kīrti. Vācaspati Miśra⁶ too quotes Dharmakīrti to criticise him.

Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā.

82. Dharmakīrti is the author of numerous works on Logic. The *Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā* is one of them. A verse⁷ of this work was quoted by the Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya in

¹ Vide Wassilief, p. 54; and Csoma de Koros's Tibetan Grammar, p. 183.

² Takakusu's I-tsing, p. lviii.

³ Vide K. B. Pathak's "Bhartṛhari and Kumārila," *Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society*, 1892, vol. xviii, p. 229.

⁴ Cf. चिन्मैव त्वविनाभावादिति यदर्थकोर्तिना ।

प्रत्यक्षायि प्रतिज्ञेयं होयेतामौ न संशयः ॥

(Sureśvara's Bṛhadāraṇyaka-vārtika, chap. vi.)

⁵ Vide *Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society*, vol. xix, 1895—97, p. 56.

⁶ Cf. यथाह धर्मकोर्तिः—

तस्माद्वार्थे न च ज्ञाने स्वाभासस्तदात्मनः ।

एकत्र प्रतिषिद्धत्वादप्यपि न संभवः ॥

(Vācaspati's Bhāmātī on Vedānta-sūtra 2-2-28).

⁷ The verse runs thus :—

भेदश्च भ्रान्तिविज्ञानैः दृष्टेतेन्द्राविवादये ॥

(*Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā* quoted in Mādhavācārya's *Sarvadarśanasamgraha*, chapter on Bauddha darśana).



the 14th century A.D. The following story¹ is told regarding the composition of this work :—

It is said that Dharmakīrti studied many dialectic *sāstras*, but his spirit was not satisfied. Once at the house of one Īśvara Sena,² a pupil of Dignāga, he heard the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*. Having heard it for the first time he at once became as proficient as Īśvara Sena who had minutely studied the work. When he heard it the second time, he became like Dignāga, the author of the work, and when he heard it the third time, he recognised several errors in the work. When he mentioned them to Īśvara Sena, the latter so far from being displeased, told him that he was at liberty to condemn all the mistakes of the work and to prepare a critical commentary on it. With the permission thus received he composed a metrical commentary on the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya* called the *Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā*.

83. The Sanskrit original of the *Pramāṇa-vārtika* appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation³ of it in the Tangyur, section *Mdo*, volume *Ce*, folios 194—258. This translation was prepared by the Indian sage Subhūti-śrī-śānti and the Tibetan interpreter Dge-waḥi-blo-gros. The work in Tibetan is called *Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-tshig* signifying “Memorial Verses explanatory of *Pramāṇa* or Sources of Knowledge.” The work is divided into four chapters as follows :—(1) Inference for one's own self (in Tibetan : *Raṅ-gi-don-rjes-su-ḍpag-pa*, in Sanskrit : *Svārthānumāna*); (2) Establishment of *Pramāṇa* (in Tibetan : *Tshaḍ-ma-grub-pa*, in Sanskrit : *Pramāṇa-siddhi*); (3) Perception (in Tibetan : *Maon-sum*, in Sanskrit : *Pratyakṣa*); and (4) Words for the sake of others (in Tibetan : *Gshan-gyi-don-gyi-tshig*, in Sanskrit : *Parārtha-vākya*). The work concludes by stating that “it was written by the great sage Śrī Dharmakīrti

The Tibetan version of the verse runs as follows :—

རྣམ་ཤེས་འབྱུང་བས་རྒྱ་བ་གཉིས།

མེད་པར་གྲ་དད་མཐོང་བ་བཞིན།

(*Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā* embodied in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, *Ce*, folio 239. Vide Louis de la Vallée Poussin's *Le Bouddhisme d'après les sources brahmaniques*, p. 34).

¹ Vide Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus* von Schiefner, p. 176.

² It seems that Īśvara Sena, in whose house Dharmakīrti heard the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*, was not a direct pupil of Dignāga, for, while Dignāga lived about 500 A.D., Dharmakīrti lived about 636 A.D.

³ I have consulted the copy of this work embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office. London.



who was unrivalled and whose fame filled the entire earth."¹ It is further stated that he was born in the Deccan (in Tibetan : Yul-lho-phyog).

Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti.

84. There was a sub-commentary on the *Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā* called *Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti* by Dharmakīrti himself. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost. There exists, however, a Tibetan translation² of it in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, *Ce*, folios 420—535. In Tibetan the work is named *Tshad-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-hgrel-wa*. In the concluding lines of the work Dharmakīrti is described as "a great teacher and dialectician, whose fame filled all quarters of the earth and who was, as it were, a lion, pressing down the head of elephant-like debaters."³

Pramāṇa-viniścaya.

85. *Pramāṇa viniścaya* quoted* by Mādhavācārya is another work on Logic by Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original

¹ ལྷན་པའི་གྲགས་པས་སའི་སྤང་མ་ལུས་པ་བྱབ་པ། འགྲན་ཆེ་མེད་
པའི་མཁས་པ་ཆེན་པོ་དཔལ་ཆོས་ཀྱི་གྲགས་པས་མཛད་པ་རྟོགས་སོ།།

(*Pramāṇa-vārtika kārikā*).

² I have consulted the Tibetan xylograph of this work embodied in the *Tangyur* of the India Office, London.

³ རྟོགས་པ་ཆེན་པོ་སའི་སྤང་མ་ལུས་པ་ན་སྤྱོད་པའི་སྤང་པོ་ཆེའི་སྤྱོད་
བོ་གཞོན་པར་མཛད་པའི་སང་གོ། རྟོགས་མ་ལུས་པར་ལྷན་པར་གྲགས་
པ་ཅན་དཔལ་སྤྱོད་དཔོན་ཆོས་གྲགས་སྤུར་བ།

(*Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti*).

* The following verses of *Pramāṇa-viniścaya* were quoted in the *Sarvadarśana-saṅgraha*, chapter on Bauddha darśana, by the Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya in the 14th century A.D. :—

नान्योऽनुभाषा बुद्ध्यास्ति तस्या नानुभवोऽपरः ।
पाश्चात्तकवैधुष्यात् स्वयं सैव प्रकाशते ॥ (क)
सद्योपलभ्यनियमाद् अभेदो नीलतद्विधोः ॥ (ख)
अविभागोऽपि बुद्ध्यास्मा विपर्ययासितदर्शनेः ।
पाश्चात्तकसंवेदितभेदवानिव लक्ष्यते ॥ (ग)

(*Pramāṇa-viniścaya*, chap. I).



of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ of it in the Tangyur, Mdo, Co, folios 259—347. The translation was prepared by the Kāśmīrian Paṇḍita Parahita Bhadra and the Tibetan interpreter Blo-lan-śes-rab in the matchless city of Kāśmīra. The work in Tibetan is called Tshad-ma-rnan-par-ñes-pa signifying "Determination of Prāmāṇa or Sources of Knowledge." The work is divided into three chapters as follows:—(1) System of Perception (in Tibetan: Maon-sum-gtan-la-dwab-pa, in Sanskrit: Pratyakṣa-vyavasthā); (2) Inference for one's own self (in Tibetan: Raṅ-gi-don-gyi-rjes-su-dpag-pa, in Sanskrit: Svārthānumāna); and (3) Inference for the sake of others (in Tibetan: Gshan-gyi-don-gyi-rjes-su-dpag-pa, in Sanskrit: Parārthānumāna). In the concluding lines Dharmakīrti is described as a great sage of unrivalled fame born in Southern India.

Prof. Louis de la Vallee Poussin in his "Le Bouddhisme d'après les sources brahmaniques," pp. 32 and 34, identifies the above verses with their Tibetan versions as follows:—

ཐོ་ཡིས་ཉམས་སྤྱོད་བྱ་བ་ཞན་མེད།
 དེ་ཡི་སྤྱོད་བྱ་བ་ཞན་ཡོད་མིན།
 བ་ཟུང་དང་འཛིན་པ་མེད་པའི་ཕྱིར།
 དེ་ནི་དེ་ལྟར་རང་ཉིད་བསམ། (༧)
 ལྟན་ཅིག་དམིགས་པ་ངེས་པའི་ཕྱིར།
 ཐོ་དང་དེ་ཐོ་བ་ཞན་མ་ཡིན། (༨)
 ཐོ་བདག་ནམ་པར་དབྱེར་མེད་ཀྱང་།
 མཐོང་བ་ཕྱིན་ཅི་ལོག་ནམས་ཀྱིས།
 བ་ཟུང་བ་འཛིན་པ་རིག་པ་ནམས།
 བསམས་ཅད་དང་བཅས་བཞིན་དོགས་འགྱུར། (༩)

(Pramāṇa-viniścaya, chap. I, embodied in the Tibetan Tangyur, Mdo, Co, folios 272, 274 and 273 respectively).

¹ I have consulted the Tibetan xylograph of this work embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office, London.



Nyāya-bindu.

86. Nyāya-bindu is another excellent work on Logic by Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work was discovered among the palm leaf manuscripts preserved in the Jaina temple of Śāntinātha, Cambay, and has been published in the Bibliotheca Indica series of Calcutta by Professor Peterson. There exists a Tibetan translation¹ of the work in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ce, folios 347—355. The work in Tibetan is called Rigs-pahi-thigspa signifying "A Drop of Logic." It is divided into three chapters as follows: (1) Perception (in Tibetan: Mñon-sum, in Sanskrit: Pratyakṣa); (2) Inference for one's own self (in Tibetan: Bdag-gi-don-gyi-rjeṣ-su-dpag-pa, in Sanskrit: Svārthānumāna); and (3) Inference for the sake of others (in Tibetan: Gshan-gyi-don-rjeṣ-su-dpag-pa, in Sanskrit: Parārthānumāna). Some of the subjects discussed in the work are noted below:—

87. In chapter I, it is stated that all objects of man are

Perception.

accomplished by perfect or valid knowledge. Valid knowledge is of two

kinds: (1) Perception (in Sanskrit: Pratyakṣa) and (2) Inference (in Sanskrit: Anumāna). Perception which is knowledge derived through the senses, etc., is described as that which is free from illusory experiences (*kalpanā*) and devoid of confusion (*abhrānta*). Illusory experiences are the experiences of false images which appear real as if they were capable of being addressed and touched, e.g., the shadow of a tree may appear as the tree itself or a rope may appear as a snake. Confusion is engendered by such causes as darkness, quick motion, journey by boat, shaking, etc., for instance, to a man journeying by boat, trees on both banks appear to move. Perception is of four kinds: (1) perception by the five senses; (2) perception by the mind; (3) self-consciousness; and (4) knowledge of a contemplative saint. An object of perception is like itself (*sva-lakṣaṇa*) while an object of inference is like any one of its class (*sāmānya-lakṣaṇa*), for instance, a cow which I see is a peculiar one possessing an infinite number of qualities which distinguish it from all cows, whereas a cow which I infer is a general one possessing certain qualities in common with other cows; that is, perception is individual knowledge while inference is general knowledge. According to the proximity or remoteness of an object, perception of it varies. This is the peculiar characteristic of an object of perception, and this characteristic proves the object to be absolutely real (*paramārtha-sat*), as it

¹ I have consulted the Tibetan xylograph of the Nyāya-bindu embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office, London, as also the excellent edition of F. J. Sher-batski.



shows that it possesses some practical efficiency, and this characteristic also shows that perception is a source of valid knowledge for it exactly corresponds to the object perceived.

88. In chapter II, Inference for one's own self (Svārthānumāna) is defined as the knowledge

Inference for one's own self.

of the inferrible derived through the reason or middle term with its three forms or characteristics. In the instance 'this hill has fire, because it has smoke,' the knowledge of the hill as having fire is derived through smoke which is the reason or middle term. The three forms or characteristics of the reason or middle term are the following :—

(1) The middle term must be connected with the minor term, *e.g.*

The hill has fire,
Because it has smoke,
Like a kitchen but unlike a lake.

In this reasoning there must be 'smoke' on the 'hill.'

(2) The middle term must abide only in cases which are homogeneous with the major term, *e.g.*, in the above reasoning 'smoke' abides in a kitchen which is homogeneous with things that contain fire.

(3) The middle term must never abide in cases which are heterogeneous from the major term, *e.g.*, in the above reasoning 'smoke' does not abide in a lake which is heterogeneous from things that contain fire.

Three kinds of the middle term.

89. The middle term is of three kinds according to the relation which it bears to the major term, thus :—

(1) Identity (in Tibetan : Rañ-bshin, in Sanskrit : Svabhāva), *e.g.*

This is a tree,
Because it is śimśapā.

(2) Effect (in Tibetan : Hbras-bu, in Sanskrit : Kārya), *e.g.*
Here there is fire, because there is smoke.

(3) Non-perception (in Tibetan : Mi-dmigs-pa, in Sanskrit : Anupalabdhi), which is of 11 kinds as follows :—

i. Non-perception of identity (Svabhāvānupalabdhi), *e.g.*
Here is no smoke, because it is not perceived (though smoke is of a nature as to be perceived if existent).

ii. Non-perception of effect (Kāryānupalabdhi), *e.g.*
Here there are no causes of smoke of unobstructed capacity, because there is no smoke here.



iii. Non-perception of the pervader or container (Vyāpakānupalabdhi), *e.g.*

Here there is no *Simśapā*, because there is no tree at all.

iv. Perception contrary to identity (Svabhāva-viruddhopalabdhi), *e.g.*

There is no cold sensation here because there is fire.

v. Perception of the opposite effect (Viruddha-kāryopalabdhi), *e.g.*

Here there is no cold sensation because there is smoke.

vi. Perception of contrary connection (Viruddha-vyāptopalabdhi), *e.g.*

Even the destruction of the past entity is not certain, because it is dependent on other causes.

vii. Perception contrary to the effect (Kārya-viruddhopalabdhi), *e.g.*

Here there are no causes of cold of unobstructed capacity, because there is fire.

viii. Perception contrary to the container (vyāpakaviruddhopalabdhi), *e.g.*

Here there is no icy sensation, because there is fire.

ix. Non-perception of the cause (Kāraṇānupalabdhi), *e.g.*

There is no smoke, because there is no fire.

x. Perception contrary to the cause (Kāraṇa-viruddhopalabdhi), *e.g.*

Hair on his body does not stand erect, because he sits near a fire.

xi. Perception of effect contrary to its cause (Kāraṇa-viruddha-kāryopalabdhi), *e.g.*

This place does not contain any person on whose body hair stands erect, because there is smoke here.

90. In chapter III Inference for the sake of others (Parārthānumāna) is defined as the

Inference for the sake of others. declaration of the three-formed middle term in words, that is, when the reason is set forth in words with a view to producing a conviction in others, it is said to be an inference for the sake of others.

Inference is a kind of knowledge; and words are here called inference by the attributing of effect to cause, for, though they



are not themselves knowledge, they produce it. Inference for the sake of others is of two kinds: (1) direct or homogeneous (in Sanskrit: Sādharmyavat); and (2) indirect or heterogeneous (in Sanskrit: Vaidharmyavat), as follows:—

- (a) Sound is non-eternal,
Because it is a product,
All products are non-eternal as a pot (direct).

- (b) Sound is non-eternal,
Because it is a product,
No non-non-eternal i.e., eternal (thing) is a product as
ether (indirect).

91. The minor term (Pakṣa) is that to which the relation of the major term is to be proved, as—This hill has fire, because it has smoke. In this reasoning 'hill' is the minor term which is to be proved as having 'fire' which is the major term. A minor term and its corresponding major term combined together, constitute a proposition which, when offered for proof, is called a thesis.

Fallacies of thesis or Pakṣābhāsa. 92. There are four fallacies of the thesis (Pakṣābhāsa).

A thesis is fallacious if it is incompatible with—

- (1) Perception, e.g. Sound is inaudible;
(2) Inference, e.g. Sound is eternal;
(3) Conception, e.g. The moon is not *luna* (Sāśi a-candra);
or (4) One's own statement, e.g. Inference is not a source of knowledge.

93. It has already been stated that the middle term must possess three characteristics. Fallacies of the middle term (Hetvābhāsa) occur even if one of the characteristics is unproved, uncertain or contradictory, thus—

A. Unproved (asiddha).

- (1) Sound is eternal, because it is visible.
(Visibility of sound is admitted by neither party).
(2) Trees are conscious, because they die if their barks are taken off.
(This peculiar kind of death of trees is not admitted by the opponent).
(3) The hill has fire, because it has vapour.
(Vapour as an effect of fire is questioned).
(4) The soul is all-pervading, because it is perceived everywhere.
(It is a matter of doubt whether the soul is perceived everywhere).



B. Uncertain (anaikāntika).

(5) Sound is non-eternal.

• Because it is knowable.

(The knowable is too general, because it includes the eternal as well as the non-eternal).

(6) •A certain man is omniscient,

Because he is a speaker.

(The reason is not general enough, for speakers are not necessarily either omniscient or non-omniscient).

C. Contradictory (viruddha).

(7) Sound is eternal,

Because it is a product.

(Here 'product' is not homogeneous with 'eternal,' that is, the middle term is opposed to the major term).

(8) Sound is eternal,

Because it is a product.

(Here 'product' is not heterogeneous from 'non-eternal').

94. The opposition of the middle term to the major term is a kind of contradiction which is admitted by both Dignāga and Dharmakīrti. Opposition of the middle term to the implied major term (in the event of the major term being ambiguous) is noted by Dignāga in his *Nyāya-praveśa*¹ as another kind of contradiction (*Viruddha*). Dharmakīrti in his *Nyāyabindu* rejects this view saying that this second contradiction is included in the first kind.² Dignāga has in his *Nyāya-praveśa* treated another kind of fallacy called "non-

¹ Vide *Nyāya-praveśa*, Fallacies of the Middle Term, No. 12. This contradiction, viz., the opposition of the middle term to the implied major term (*रहविधानलक्षदु विषय*) is called in Tibetan: རྒྱུ་མཐུན་གྱི་ཁྱད་པར་གྱི་མཐུན་པ།

པར་མཐུན་པའི་ཁྱད་པར་གྱི་མཐུན་པ། (*Nyāya-praveśa*).

² तत्र च द्वितीयोऽपि रहविधानलक्षदु विषयः । ... स रश् कलामोक्तः अनयोरेव अन्तर्भावान् । (*Nyāya-bindu*, Peterson's edition, Bibliotheca Indica series, chapter III, p. 113).

अर्थ च विषय आचार्य दिङ्नागेन उक्तः । स कलाम् वार्तिककारेण सता स्या लोक्तः । (*Nyāyabindu-tīkā*, Peterson's edition, Bibliotheca Indica series, chapter III, p. 78).



erroneous contradiction" ¹ (Viruddhāvyabhicāri), which it rejected by Dharmakīrti in his Nyāyabindu, on the ground that it does not arise in the case of inference, but is based on the scriptures of the two parties engaged in disputation.

95. In opposition to Dignāga, Dharmakīrti maintains that Dharmakīrti's Theory of example 'example' is not a part of a syllogism, as it is included in the middle term, e.g.

The hill is fiery,
Because it is smoky,
Like a kitchen.

In this reasoning the term 'smoky' includes a 'kitchen' as well as other similar things, hence it is almost unnecessary to cite the example 'kitchen.'

Compare K. B. Pathak's "On the authorship of the Nyāyabindu" in the *Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society*, vol. XIX, p. 51.

¹ Vide Nyāya-praveśa, Fallacies of the Middle Term, No. 10. This fallacy of 'non-erroneous contradiction' is called in Sanskrit: विरुद्धा-
व्यभिचारौ and in Tibetan: འགམ་བ་ལ་མི་འབྱུང་བ (Nyāya-praveśa).

विरुद्धाव्यभिचार्यपि संशयहेतुवृत्तः । स इह कस्माच्चोक्तः अनुमानविषये
असम्भवात् । (Nyāyabindu, p. 115).

ननु आचार्येण विरुद्धाव्यभिचार्यपि संशयहेतुवृत्तः ।... क्व तर्हि आचार्य-
दिङ्नागेन अर्थ हेतुदोष उक्तः इत्याह । ... तस्मादागमादयमनुमानमाश्रित्य विरुद्धा-
व्यभिचार्यवृत्तः । (Nyāyabindu-ṭīkā, p. 84).

Compare also B.B.R.A.S., vol. XIX, p. 49.

² विरुद्धो हेतुवृत्तः । तावन्तैव अर्थप्रतीतिरिति न प्रथम् इष्टान्तो नाम साधना-
वयवः कश्चित् । तेनास्य लक्षणं प्रथम् [न] उच्यते गतार्थत्वात् ।

(Nyāyabindu, Peterson's edition, Bibliotheca Indica series, pp. 115—
116). Peterson has omitted न wrongly as will appear from the Tibetan
version which runs as follows :—

གདན་ཆོག་ས་ཀྱི་མཚན་ཉིད་གསུམ་སྟེ་ས་པ་དེ་ཅམ་གྱིས་དོན་དོགས་པས།
དཔེ་ཞེས་བྱ་བ་སྟུབ་པ་དེ་ཡན་ལག་ནི་ལོགས་ཤིག་ཏུ་ཅི་ཡང་མེད་དོ།
དེས་ན་དེའི་མཚན་ཉིད་ལོགས་ཤིག་ཏུ་མ་བཟོད་དེ་དོན་གོ་བའི་ཕྱིར། ॥ १२३ ॥

(Nyāyabindu, Sherbatski's edition, St. Petersburg, p. 193).

Nevertheless, says Dharmakīrti,¹ the example has this much value that it points out in a particular way what has been expressed in a general form by the middle term : thus, the general expression "all smoky things are fiery" is made more impressive by the particular example 'kitchen' which is smoky as well as fiery.

96. Example is of two kinds : (1) homogeneous and (2) heterogeneous. Fallacies of the homogeneous example occur as follows :—

- (1) Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal,
Like action.

(Action cannot serve as an example, because it is not eternal, that is, because it is excluded from the major term).

- (2) Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal,
Like atoms.

(Atoms cannot serve as an example, because they are not incorporeal, that is, because they are excluded from the middle term).

- (3) Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal,
Like a pot.

(Pot cannot serve as an example, because it is neither eternal nor incorporeal, that is, because it is excluded from both major and middle terms).

- (4) This man is passionate,
Because he is a speaker,
Like a person in the street.

(The person in the street cannot serve as an example, as it is questionable whether he is passionate, that is, it involves doubt as to the validity of the major term).

- (5) This man is mortal,
Because he is passionate,
Like a person in the street.

(This example involves doubt as to the validity of the middle term, that is, it is questionable whether the person in the street is passionate).

.....उक्तम् अभेदेन.....

.पुनर्विशेषेण दर्शनोपायवृत्तौ । (Nyāyabindu, p. 116).



- (6) This man is non-omniscient,
Because he is passionate,
Like a person in the street.

(This example involves doubt as to the validity of both the major and middle terms, that is, it is questionable whether the person in the street is passionate and non-omniscient).

- (7) This man is passionate,
Because he is a speaker,
Like a certain person.

(This example is unconnected (*ananvaya*), for there is no inseparable connection between being 'passionate' and being a 'speaker').

- (8) Sound is non-eternal,
Because it is a product,
Like a pot.

(This example involves the fallacy of 'connection unshown,' *apradarśitānvaya*: the connection should be shown as follows: All products are non-eternal like a pot).

- (9) Sound is a product,
Because it is non-eternal,
All non-eternal things are products like a pot.

(The example involves the fallacy of inverted connection, *viparītānvaya*; the real connection should be shown as follows: All products are non-eternal like a pot).

97. Similarly there are nine fallacies of the heterogeneous example.

98. *Refutation (Dūṣaṇa)* consists in pointing out in the reasoning of an opponent any one of the fallacies mentioned above. The fallacies or semblances of refutation are the futilities called in Sanskrit *Jāti*.¹

99. In the concluding lines of the *Nyāyabindu* it is stated that "Dharmakīrti vanquished the entire Tīrthikas as Śākya-muni had subdued the large army of Māra; and as the sun dispels darkness, the *Nyāyabindu* has exterminated the Ātmaka theory (that is, the Tīrthika doctrine)—wonderful!"²

¹ For *Jāti* vide *Nyāya-sūtra*, Book I, aphorism 58.

² འགྲུ་ཐུབ་པས་བདུན་གྱི་མྱོ་བོ་ཆེ།།

ཆོས་ཀྱི་གྲགས་པས་སྤྱི་གྲགས་མ་ལུས་པ།།



Hetu-bindu-vivarāṇa.

100. The Hetu-bindu-vivarāṇa is another excellent work on Logic by Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ce, folios 355—375. The work in Tibetan is called Gtan-tshigs-kyi-thigs-pa signifying "A Drop of Reason." The work is divided into three chapters as follows:—

(1) Relation of identity between the middle term and the major term (in Tibetan: *Ran-bshin-gyi-gtan-tshigs*, in Sanskrit: *Sva-bhāva-hetu*); (2) Relation of effect and cause between the middle term and the major term (in Tibetan: *Hbras-buhi-gtan-tshigs*, in Sanskrit: *Kārya-hetu*); and (3) Relation of negation between the middle term and the heterogeneous major term (in Tibetan: *Mi-dmigs-paḥi-gtan-tshigs*, in Sanskrit: *Anupalabdhi-hetu*).

Tarka-nyāya or Vāda-nyāya.

101. The Tarka-nyāya or Vāda-nyāya is another treatise on Logic by Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation² in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ce, folios 384—416. The work in Tibetan is called *Rtsod-paḥi-rigs-pa* signifying the "Method of Discussion." The Tibetan translation was prepared by the great Indian sage Jñāna-śrī-bhadra and the Tibetan interpreter-monk *Dge-waḥi-blo-groṣ*. Subsequently the translation was retouched by the great Pandita Dīpaṅkara (of Vikramanīpura in Bengal, born in 980 A.D.) and the interpreter-monk *Dar-ma-grags*.

Santānāntara-siddhi.

102. The Santānāntara-siddhi is a philosophical treatise by Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of the work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan version³ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ce, folios

ཉི་མས་སྒྲུབ་ཅུ་མ་རིགས་པའི་བྲིགས་བའིས།

བདག་གི་ལྟ་བ་དུངས་ལུང་ངོ་མཚར་ཉིད།

(Nyāyabindu).

¹ I have consulted the copy embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office, London.

² I have consulted the work embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office, London.

³ I have consulted the Tibetan version embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office, London.



416—420. The work in Tibetan is called *Rgyud-gshan-grub-pa* signifying "Proof of the Continuity of Succession."

Sambandha-parikṣā.

103. The *Sambandha-parikṣā* is another philosophical treatise by Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of the work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, Ce, folios 375—377. The work in Tibetan is called *Hbrel-wa-brtag-pa* signifying "Examination of Connection." The Tibetan translation was prepared by the Indian teacher Jñānagarbha and the interpreter Vande-nam-mkhaṣ.

Sambandha-parikṣā-vṛtti.

104. The *Sambandha-parikṣā-vṛtti*² is a commentary on the *Sambandha-parikṣā* by Dharmakīrti himself. The Sanskrit original of the work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, Ce, folios 377—384. The work in Tibetan is called *Hbrel-wa-brtag-paḥi-hgrel-wa*.

DEVENDRABODHI (ABOUT 650 A.D.).

105. Devendrabodhi, called in Tibetan *Lha-dwañ-blo*, was a contemporary of Dharmakīrti,³ and so lived about 650 A.D. He wrote the following work on Logic :—

106. The *Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā*, called in Tibetan, *Tshad-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-dkaḥ-hgrel*, signifying "An Explanation of Difficulties in the *Pramāṇa-vārtika* of Dharmakīrti." The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁴ in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, Che, folios 1—380. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Subhūti-śrī and the Tibetan interpreter-monk *Dge-waḥi-blo-groṣ*.

107. This story⁵ is told regarding the composition of the *Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā* :—

Dharmakīrti chose Devendrabodhi to write a commentary on his *Pramāṇa-vārtika*. After Devendrabodhi had finished the

¹ I have consulted the copy embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office, London.

² I have consulted the copy of this work embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office, London.

³ Vide Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 186—187.

⁴ I have consulted the work in the monastery of Labrang in Sikkim in 1907.

⁵ Vide Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 186—187.

commentary for the time and shown it to Dharmakīrti, the latter erased it with water. After he had compiled it a second time, Dharmakīrti burnt it in fire. He then compiled it a third time and gave it to Dharmakīrti with the observation : " Since the majority of men are incompetent and time is fleeting, I have written this commentary for the people of lighter understanding." This time Dharmakīrti allowed the work to exist.

SĀKYABODHI (ABOUT 675 A.D.).

108. Sākyabodhi¹ is stated to have been a pupil of Devendrabodhi. He seems to have lived about 675 A.D. He was the author of the following work :—

109. The *Pramāṇa-vārtika* (-*pañjikā*)-*tīkā*, called in Tibetan: *Tshad-ma-rnam-ḡgrel-gyi-ḡgrel-bśad*, which is an annotation on the *Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā* of Devendrabodhi. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation² which covers volumes Je and Ne of the *Tangyur*, Mdo. The translation was prepared by the interpreter *Dge-waḥi-blo gros*.

VINĪTA DEVA (ABOUT 700 A.D.).

• 110. Vinīta Deva,³ called in Tibetan *Dul-lha*, lived in Nālanda during the time of king Lalita Candra, son of Govi Candra, and Dharmakīrti died during the time of Govi Candra. Vimala Candra, the father of Govi Candra, was married to the sister of Bhartṛhari, who sprang from the ancient royal family of Malwa. Supposing this Bhartṛhari to be identical with the famous grammarian of that name who died in 651—652 A.D.,⁴ we may place his contemporary Govi Candra in the middle of the 7th century A.D. This is exactly the time when Dharmakīrti died. Hence we may conclude that Lalita Candra, son of Govi Candra, flourished towards the end of the 7th century A.D. Vinīta Deva, contemporary of Lalita Candra, must also have lived about this time, a view which harmonises with the date of Dharmakīrti on whose works Vinīta Deva wrote commentaries.

Vinīta Deva, who was the famous author of the *Samayabhedoparacana-cakra*, wrote the following works on Logic :—

¹ Vide Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus* von Schiefner, p. 187.

² I have consulted this work in the monastery of Labrang in Sikkim in 1907.

³ Vide Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus* von Schiefner, pp. 195—198, 272; *Pag-sam-jon-zang* edited by Sarat Chandra Das, pp. xlviii, 108.

⁴ Vide Takakusu's *I-tsing*, p. lvii.



111. **Nyāya-bindu-ṭīkā**, called in Tibetan : **Rigs-paḥi-thigs-pa-rgya-cher-hgrel-wa**, which is a detailed commentary on the **Nyāyabindu** of **Dharmakīrti**. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but a Tibetan translation¹ of it exists in the **Tangyur**, **Mdo**, **She**, folios 1—43. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage **Jina Mitra** and the interpreter of **Shu-chen** named **Vande-ye-se-sde**.

112. **Hetu-bindu-ṭīkā**, called in Tibetan : **Gtan-tshigs-kyi-thigs-pa-rgya-cher-hgr-l-wa**, which is a detailed commentary on the **Hetu-bindu** of **Dharmakīrti**. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation² in the **Tangyur**, **Mdo**, **She**, folios 116—205. The translation was prepared by the Indian teacher **Prajñā Varma** and the interpreter-monk of **Shu-chen** named **Dpal-bṛtsegs-rakṣita**.

113. **Vāda-nyāya-vyākhyā**, called in Tibetan : **Rtsod-paḥi-rigs-paḥi-hgrel-wa**, which is a commentary on the **Vāda-nyāya** (otherwise called **Tarka-nyāya**) of **Dharmakīrti**. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation³ in the **Tangyur**, **Mdo**, **Ze**, folios 39—65. The work opens thus : "Who is self-perfected in sweet logical discussion, supreme in patience, affection, charity and self-restraint, and who is the most excellent of logicians—to him (Buddha) bowing down I compose a commentary on the text of **Vāda-nyāya**."

114. **Sambandha-parīkṣā-ṭīkā**, called in Tibetan **Hbrel-pa-bṛtag-paḥi-rgya-cher-bśad-pa**, which is a copious commentary on the **Sambandhaparīkṣā** of **Dharmakīrti**. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁴ in the **Tangyur**, **Mdo**, **Ze**, folios 1—24. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage **Jñāna-garbha** and the Tibetan interpreter **Vande-nam-mkhas**. The work opens thus :—

"Who is entirely unconnected with the world, and is yet designated as the supreme teacher of it—to him bowing down fully I explain the **Sambandha-parīkṣā**."

115. **Ālambana-parīkṣā-ṭīkā**, called in Tibetan **Dmigs-pa-bṛtag-paḥi-hgrel-bśad**, is an annotation on the **Ālambana-parīkṣā** of **Dignāga**. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁵ in the

¹ This work was brought down to Calcutta by the British Mission to Tibet during 1904. I examined it by permission of the Government of India. It is now deposited in the British Museum, London.

² I examined this work by permission of the Government of India when it was brought down to Calcutta by the British Mission to Tibet, 1904.

³ I have consulted the India Office copy.

⁴ I have consulted the India Office copy.

⁵ I have consulted the India Office copy.

Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, folios 186—200. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Sākya-simha and the interpreter Vande-dpal-brtsegs of Shu-chen. The work opens thus:—

“Meditating on the merciful Omniscient One, and saluting him by my head, I compose the Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā-ṭīkā.”

It ends thus:—

“Here is finished the Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā-ṭīkā, which is a clean work of the teacher Vinita Deva who weighed all sorts of ālambaṇa (objects of thought), and is a lion of speakers confounding the brains of the Tirthika-elephants.”

116. Santānāntara-siddhi-ṭīkā, called in Tibetan: Rgyud-gshan-grub-paḥi-bḡrel-bḡad, being a commentary on the Santānāntara-siddhi of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Tshe, folios 1—21. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Viśuddha-simha and the interpreter of Shu-chen named Dpal-rtsegs-rakṣita.

CANDRA GOMIN (ABOUT 700 A.D.).

117. Candra Gomin,² called in Tibetan: Zla-wa-dge-bḡñen, was born in a Kṣatriya family in the east at Vārendra (modern Rajshahye in Bengal). He was endowed with a very keen intellect and acquired distinction in literature, grammar, logic, astronomy, music, fine arts and the science of medicine. Under Ācārya Sthiramati he learnt the Sūtra and Abhidharma Piṭakas of the Buddhist scripture, and was converted to Buddhism by the Vidyādhara Ācārya Aśoka.³ He had an ardent faith in the Buddhist god Avalokiteśvara and the goddess Tārā.⁴ He was offered in marriage a daughter of the king of Nālendra. Being told that she was named Tārā, which was the name of his tutelary deity, he thinking it improper to accept her hands shrank from her with fear. Upon this the king of Vārendra became angry and put Candra Gomin into a chest which was thrown into the Ganges. The chest was carried down until it stopped at an island at the place where the Ganges flows into the ocean. Candra Gomin with deep reverence offered a prayer to goddess Tārā by whose blessing he got out of the chest. He

¹ I have consulted the India Office xylograph of the Tibetan version.

² Vide Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 145—146, 148—158; and *Pag-sam-jon-zang* edited in the original Tibetan by Sarat Chandra Das, Calcutta, pp. 95 96.

³ Ācārya Aśoka was the author of a logical treatise called Sāmānya-dūṣaṇa-dikprakāśikā, a short treatise on the refutation of generality, lately recovered from Nepal.

⁴ For Candra Gomin's “Ārya-Tārā-antarbali-vidhi” vide Satisechandra Vidyabhusana's *Sragdharā-stotra*, Introduction, pp. xx, xxi.



resided in the island which was in course of time named Candra-dvīpa¹ or the island of Candra. He as a Buddhist devotee (*upāsaka*) established there stone-images of Avalokiteśvara and Tārā. At first only fishermen settled in the island, but afterwards other people came to live there. Gradually the island became a town.

118. Candra Gomin thereupon went to Ceylon and on his way back found in Southern India in the house of Vararuci, Nāga-S'eṣa's (Patañjali's) Bhāṣya on Pāṇini's grammar. Finding that it contained "many words but few thoughts," he himself composed a commentary on Pāṇini, which was named Candra-vyākaraṇa.² Afterwards he came to Nālandā—the store-house of knowledge—and met there Candra-kīrti, the famous commentator on the Mādhyamika Philosophy of Ārya Nāgārjuna. Candra Gomin himself was a follower of the Yogācāra system expounded by Ārya Asaṅga. While Candra Kīrti and Candra Gomin entered upon philosophical discussions people used to observe³: "Alas! the text of Ārya Nāgārjuna is medicine to some but poison to others, whereas the text of invincible Ārya Asaṅga is very ambrosia to all men." It is further stated that into a well at Nālandā Candra Gomin threw the original manuscript of his grammar, thinking that it was not better than the one which Candra Kīrti had written. At that time Tārā and Avalokiteśvara appeared before him saying: "Though Candra Kīrti is overwhelmed with pride as a sage, your work is more useful than all others and will do immense good to the world." They raised the manuscript from the well, which was

¹ Candra-dvīpa is situated in the district of Barisal in South-eastern Bengal at a place where the Padmā, which is a main outlet of the Ganges, falls into the ocean. Vārendra in which Candra Gomin was born is identical with the Rajshahye division in North-eastern Bengal through which the Padmā flows.

² For Candra-vyākaraṇa vide Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's "Sanskrit works on Literature, Grammar, Rhetoric and Lexicography, as preserved in Tibet" in the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, new series, Vol. iii, No. 2, 1907. The Candra-vyākaraṇa in the original Sanskrit has been printed in Germany.

ཀུན་མཁེ་ལ་འཕགས་པ་ཁྱེ་ལྟུང་བ་གཞུང་།

ལ་ལའི་སྒྲན་ལ་ལ་ལའི་དུག།

མི་ཡམ་འཕགས་པ་ཐོགས་མེད་གཞུང་།

སྒྲེ་བོ་ཀུན་ལ་བདུད་ཅི་ཉིད། (Pag-sam-jon-zang, p. 96).

thence reputed as "Candra's well" (in Sanskrit: Candra-kūpa and in Tibetan: Tsandrahi-khron-pa), the water of which was wont to be drunk by people in the belief that thereby their intellect would become sharp. Candra Kīrti was, however, a great admirer of Candra Gomin. When the latter arrived at Nālandā the monks refused to give him a reception, saying that it was not proper for priests to welcome a mere devotee (*upāsaka*). Hearing this Candra Kīrti brought three chariots, two of which were occupied by himself and Candra Gomin respectively, while in the third was placed an image of Mañjuśrī, the Buddhist god of learning. The chariots passed through the town in a great procession attended by the whole body of priests who came really to recite hymns to Mañjuśrī, but apparently to accord a fitting welcome to Candra Gomin.¹

119. Candra Gomin lived at a time when Śīla, son of Harṣa, reigned. During this time king Śimha of the Licchavi dynasty reigned in Vārendra. The famous poet Ravi Gupta was a contemporary of Harṣa, son of Śimha. Śrī Harṣa seems to be the same as king Harṣa Vardhana who was a contemporary of Hwen-thsang and reigned in 647 A.D. His son Śīla seems, on a rough calculation, to have reigned in 700 A.D., when his contemporary Candra Gomin must also have lived. Jaina Hema Candra Sūri who lived during 1088—1172 A.D., refers to Candra Gomin while Jayāditya,² the famous author of the *Kāśikā-vṛtti*, who died in 661—662 A.D.,³ does not mention him. This may be explained on the supposition that Candra Gomin lived after Jayāditya, but preceded Hema Candra.

120. Candra Gomin was the author of the following work on Logic: *Nyāyāloka-siddhi*, called in Tibetan: *Rigs-pa-grub-paḥi-sgron-ma*, signifying "a lamp of logical reasoning." The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁴ in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, *Ze*, folios 200—201. The translation was prepared by Paṇḍita Śrī Sita-prabha and the interpreter-monk Vairocana.

RAVI GUPTA (ABOUT 725 A.D.).

121. Ravi Gupta,⁵ called in Tibetan: *Ñi-ma-sbaḡ*, was born in Kāśmīra. He was a great poet, dialectician and Tāntric

¹ *Vide* Pag sam-jon-zang, pp. 95-96.

² *Vide* Professor F. Kielhorn's "Indra Gomin and other grammarians" in the *Indian Antiquary*, Vol. xv, June 1886, pp. 181, 184.

³ *Vide* Takakusu's *I-tsing*, p. lvii.

⁴ I have used the India Office copy.

⁵ *Vide* Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 146, 147, 243; and Pag sam-jon-zang, part i, pp. 90, 101, 118, xxxvii.



teacher, who established 12 great religious schools in his native country and Magadha. He was a contemporary of king Bhārṣa of Vārendra, and flourished a little later than Candrar Gomin, who had lived during the time of Bhārṣa's father Simha. Ravi Gupta must have lived in the first quarter of the eighth century A.D., for his disciple the famous Tāntric monk Sarvajña Mitra¹ lived in the middle of that century. Ravi Gupta was the author² of the following work on Logic:—

122. *Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti*, called in Tibetan: *Tshad-ma-nam-hgrel-gyi-hgrel-pa*, which is an annotation on the *Pramāṇa-vārtika* of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation³ in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, *Tshe*, folios 132-252.

JINENDRABODHI (ABOUT 725 A.D.).

123. In the Tangyur, *Mdo*, *Re*, there is the Tibetan version of a work called *Viśālāmala-vatī-nāma-pramāṇa-samuccaya-tikā*. This version was prepared by the Tibetan interpreter *Rdo-rje-rgyal-mtshan* with the assistance of *Dpal-ldan-blo-gros*.

124. The author of the original work was Jinendrabodhi, called in Tibetan *Rgyal-lwan-blo-gros*, who was a venerable countryman of the Bodhisattva (*Ḍignāya*?). He is perhaps the same person who wrote the well-known *Nyāsa* on the grammar of Pāṇini in the eighth century A.D.

SĀNTA RAKṢITA (749 A.D.).

125. *Sānta Raksita*,⁴ called in Tibetan: *Shi-wa-htsho*, was born in the royal family of Za-hor [in Bengal?]. The exact date of his birth is unknown, but it is stated that he was born at the time of Go Pāla who reigned up to 705 A.D. (*vide* Appendix B) and died at the time of Dharma Pāla who became king in 765 A.D. He followed the Svatantra Mādhyamika school, and was a Professor at Nālandā (*vide* Appendix A). He visited Tibet at the invitation of King Khri-sron-deu-tsan who was born in 728 A.D., and died in 864 A.D. The king, with the assistance of *Sānta Raksita*, built in 749 A.D. the monastery of Sam-ye⁵ in

¹ *Vide* Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's *Sragdharā Stotra*, Introduction, p. xxx, printed in the Bibliotheca Indica series of Calcutta.

² For Ravi Gupta's *Ārya-kośa* see Rockhill's *Buddha*, p. 228; and for his works on Tantra, see Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's *Sragdharā Stotra*, Introduction, pp. v-vii.

³ I have consulted the copy of the India Office, London.

⁴ *Vide* *Pag-sam-jon-zang* edited by Sarat Chandra Das, C.I.E., Calcutta, p. 112.

⁵ *Vide* Csoma de Koros's *Tibetan Grammar*, p. 183; Sarat Chandra Das in the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, 1881; Part I, p. 226; and Waddell's *Lamaism*, p. 28.



Tibet, modelled after the Odantapura Vihāra of Magadha. Sam-ye was the first Buddhist monastery in Tibet and Śānta Rakṣita was its first abbot. He worked in Tibet for 13 years, that is, until 762 A.D. He was known there under the name of Ācārya Bodhisattva, and was the author of the following works on Logic:—

126. *Vāda-nyāya-vṛtti-vipaṇcitārtha*, called in Tibetan: *Rtsod-paḥi-rigs-paḥi-hbrel-pa-don-rnam-par-hbyed-pa*, an elaborate commentary on the *Vāda-nyāya* of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a tibetan translation¹ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, folios 65—186, and in the Tangyur, Mdo, Tshe, folios 21—131. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Kumāra-śrī-bhadra and the Tibetan interpreter-monks venerable Seṣ-rab and Hbro-señ-dkar (who was a native of the province of Hbro or Dō) in the holy monastery of *Bsam-yaṣ* (Sam-ye). The work opens thus:—

“Who constantly dispersing darkness by the ray of the heap of various pure precious qualities, exerted himself for the sake of obtaining the fruits of desire of various sentient beings and rejoiced to do good to the entire world—to that Mañju-śrī bowing down in reverence, I compose this concise and stainless *Vāda-nyāya-vṛtti-vipaṇcitārtha*.”

127. *Tattva-saṃgraha-kārikā*, called in Tibetan: *De-kho-na-nid-bṣduṣ-paḥi-tshig-lehur-byaṣ-pa*, a work containing memorial verses on a summary of the *Tattvas*. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation² in the Tangyur, Mdo, He, folios 1—146. The translation was prepared by the Indian Paṇḍita Guṇākara-śrī-bhadra (belonging to the religious circle first instituted by the great king Lalitāditya in the incomparable city of Kāśmīra) and the great Tibetan interpreter the Śākya monk Lha-bla-ma-shi-wa-hod in the province of Guge (S.-W. Tibet). The work reviews various systems of philosophy such as the Sāṃkhya, Jaina, etc.³

¹ I have consulted the xylograph of this work contained in the India Office, London.

² I have consulted the work in the monastery of Labrang, Sikkim, which I visited in June 1907. For a detailed account of this work *vide* my “Sāṃkhya Philosophy in the Land of the Lamas” in the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, new series, Vol. iii, No. 8.

³ The *Tattvasaṃgraha* herein noticed is quite different from the *Tattvasamāsa*, a Brāhmaṇic work on the Sāṃkhya philosophy, a manuscript of which is contained in the library of the Asiatic Society of Bengal.

Dr George Bühler, during his explorations of the *Bṛhat-jñāna-kośa* in the temple of *Āśvina-nātha* at Jesalmīr, found in 1873 a *Poṭhī*, consisting of 189 ancient palm-leaves showing the characters of the 12th or 13th century, and bearing on the outside corner the title *Kamala-śīla-tarka*

128. The subject-matter of the work begins thus:—

"From *Pradhāna* (the primordial matter or nature) possessed of entire powers all sorts of effects are produced."

(vide Dr. G. Bühler's correspondence with Rai Sarat Chandra Das, Bahadur, C.I.E., published in the *Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta*, Vol. i, part ii, p. x). The real name of the work, according to Dr. Bühler, is *Tarka-saṅgraha*. Now, this *Tarka-saṅgraha* is nothing but *Tattvasaṅgraha* of Śānta Raksita with the commentary, by Kamala Sila. The introductory part (*Maṅgala*) of the *Tarka-saṅgraha*, as noticed by Dr. Bühler, runs as follows:—

प्रथमोऽशोभयात्मादि [क्रियया] रक्षितं चलम् ।
 कर्मात् तत्फलसम्बन्ध व्यवस्थादिसमाश्रयम् ॥
 गुणद्रव्यक्रियाजातिसमवायाद्युपाधिभिः ।
 शून्यमारीपिताकारशब्दप्रत्ययगोचरम् ॥
 स्पष्टलक्षणसंयुक्त प्रमाद्वितयनिश्चितम् ।
 अणोरपि नांशेन मिथोभूतापरात्मकम् ॥
 असंक्रान्तिसमाश्रयं प्रतिविम्बादिसंनिभम् ।
 सर्वप्रपञ्च सन्दोहनिर्मुक्तमगतं परैः ॥
 स्वतन्त्रवृत्तिनिःसङ्गो जगज्जितविधित्वया ।
 अनल्पकल्पासंख्येय साक्षीभूत महोदयः ॥
 यः प्रतीत्यसमुत्पादं जगद वदतां वरः ।
 तं सर्वज्ञं प्रणम्यायं क्रियते तत्कसंप्रदः ॥

The introductory part in the *Tattvasaṃgraha* is identical with the above as is evident from the Tibetan version extracted below :—

རང་བཞིན་དབང་ལྡན་གཉིས་ཀ་དང་།
བདག་སོགས་བྱེད་དང་བྱལ་གཡོ་བ།
ལས་དང་དེ་འབྲས་འབྲེལ་བ་དག།
ནམ་པར་བཞག་ལ་སོགས་པའི་རྟེན།
ཡོན་ཏན་རྣམས་དང་བྱ་བ་དང་།
རིགས་དང་འདྲ་སོགས་ཁྱད་པར་གྱིས།
རྟོང་དང་སྒྲིབ་པ་དགས་ནམ་ཅན་ནི།
སྒྲིབ་དང་ཤེས་པའི་སྒྲིབ་ཡུལ་ཅན།



The work is divided into 31 chapters, viz. : (1) examination of nature (in Sanskrit : Svabhāva-parīkṣā, in Tibetan : Rañ-bshin-brtag-pa) ; (2) examination of the sense-organs (in Sanskrit : Indriya-parīkṣā, in Tibetan : Dwañ-phyug-brtag-pa) ; (3) examination of both (in Sanskrit : Ūbhaya-parīkṣā, in Tibetan : Gñis-ka-brtag-pa) ; (4) examination of the theory that the world is self-existent (in Sanskrit : Jagat-svabhāva-vāda-parīkṣā, in Tibetan : Hgro-wa-rañ-bshin-du-smra-wa-brtag-pa) ; (5) examination of Brahma, the presiding deity of sound (in Sanskrit : Śabda-Brahma-parīkṣā, in Tibetan : Sgrahi-tshañs-pa-brtag-pa) ; (6) examination of the soul (in Sanskrit : Puruṣa-parīkṣā, in Tibetan : Skyes-bu-brtag-pa) ; (7) examination of the Nyāya and Vaiśeṣika doctrines of the soul (in Sanskrit : Nyāya-vaiśeṣika-parikalpita-puruṣa-parīkṣā, in Tibetan : Rigs-pa-can-dañ-bye-brag-paṣ-kun-tu-brtags-paḥi-skyes-bu-brtag-pa) ; (8) examination of the Mīmāṃsaka doctrine of the soul (in Sanskrit : Mīmāṃsaka-kalpita-ātma-parīkṣā, in Tibetan : Spyod-pa-paṣ-rtags-paḥi-bdag-brtag-pa) ; (9) examination of Kapila's doctrine of the soul (in Sanskrit : Kapila-parikalpita-ātma-parīkṣā, in Tibetan : Ser-skye-paṣ-kun-tu-brtags-paḥi-bdag-brtag-pa) ; (10) examination of the Digambara Jaina doctrine of the soul (in Sanskrit : Digambara-parikalpita-ātma-parīkṣā, in Tibetan : Nam-mkhaḥi-goṣ-can-gyis-kun-tu-brtags-paḥi-bdag-brtag-pa) ; (11) examination of the Upaniṣad-doctrine of the soul (in Sanskrit : Upaniṣad-kalpita-ātma-parīkṣā, in Tibetan :

མཚན་ཉིད་གསལ་དང་ལྡན་པ་ཡི།

ཚད་ལ་གཉིས་གྱིས་གཏན་ལ་དབབ།

ཆ་གས་ཤིན་དུ་སྤྲོ་བས་ཀྱང་།

འདྲིས་པ་གཞན་གྱི་བདག་ཉིད་མིན།

མི་འབྲོ་བྱོག་མཐའ་མེད་པ་ཙན།

གཞུགས་བརྟན་ལ་སོགས་དག་དང་འབྲ།

སྤྲོས་པ་ཀུན་གྱི་ཚོགས་དང་བྲལ།

གཞན་གྱི་དོགས་པ་མཛད་བཞིན་པ།



U-pa-ni-ṣa-di-kaṣ-hṛtagṣ-paḥi-bdag-hṛtag-pa); (12) examination of the Vātsīputra doctrine of the soul (in Sanskrit: Vātsīputra-kalpita-ātma-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Gnaṣ-maḥi-buṣ-bdag-hṛtag-pa); (13) examination of the permanence of entities (in Sanskrit: Sthira-padārtha-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Bṛtan-paḥi-dnoṣ-po-hṛtag-pa); (14) examination of the relation between *Karma* and its effect (in Sanskrit: Karma-phala-sambāndha-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Laṣ-daṅ-hbraṣ-buḥi-hbrel-pa-hṛtag-pa); (15) examination of the meaning of the word 'substance' (in Sanskrit: Dravya-padārtha-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Rdsas-kyi-tshig-gi-don-hṛtag-pa); (16) examination of the meaning of the word 'quality' (in Sanskrit: Guṇa-śabdārtha-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Yon-tan-gyi-tshig-gi-don-hṛtag-pa); (17) examination of the meaning of the word *Karma* (in Sanskrit: Karma-śabdārtha-parīkṣā in Tibetan: Laṣ-kyi-tshig-gi-don-hṛtag-pa); (18) examination of the meaning of the word generality or genus (in Sanskrit: Sāmānya-śabdārtha-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Spyih-tshig-gi-don-hṛtag-pa); (19) examination of the meaning of the words 'generality,' and 'particularity' (in Sanskrit: Sāmānya-viśeṣa-śabdārtha-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Spyi-daṅ-bye-brag-gi-tshig-gi-don-hṛtag-pa); (20) examination of the meaning of the

བསྐྱེད་པ་གྲངས་མེད་སྤྱི་ཏུ་བསམ།
 ཐུགས་རྗེ་ཆེན་པོ་འི་བདག་གུང་པ།
 རྟོན་ཅིང་འབྲེལ་བར་འབྱུང་བ་ནི།
 གང་གིས་གསུངས་པ་སྣ་བའི་མཆོག།
 ཀུན་མཁྱེན་དེ་ལ་ཕྱག་འཆམ་ནས།
 དེ་ཉིད་ནམས་ནི་བཟུ་བར་བྱ།

Dr. Bühler further observes that the first section of the Tarkasaṃgraha contains ईश्वर-परीक्षा (examination of God), कपिलकल्पितात्म-परीक्षा (examination of Kapila's doctrine of the soul), औपनिषदकल्पितात्म-परीक्षा (examination of the soul according to the Upaniṣads), स्थिरमात्र-परीक्षा (examination of permanent entity), etc. The last colophon appears to him to be स्वतः प्रामाण्यवाद (examination of the doctrine of self-evidence). These are the very subjects treated in the Tattvasaṃgraha. So the two works are identical.

- word 'co-existent cause' (in Sanskrit: *Samavāya-śabdārtha-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Hdu-wah-tshig-don-brtag-pa*); (21) examination of the meaning of the word 'sound' (in Sanskrit: *Śabdārtha-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Sgra-yi-don-brtag-pa*); (22) examination of the definition of perception (in Sanskrit: *Pratyakṣa-lakṣaṇa-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Maon-sum-gyi-ntshan-ñid-brtag-pa*); (23) examination of inference (in Sanskrit: *Anumānaparīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Rjes-su-dpag-pa-brtag-pa*); (24) examination of other kinds of valid knowledge (in Sanskrit: *Pramāṇāntara-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Tshad-ma-shan-brtag-pa*); (25) examination of the doctrine of evolution (in Sanskrit: *Vivartavāda-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Hgyur-war-smra-wa-brtag-pa*); (26) examination of the three times (in Sanskrit: *Kāla-traya-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Dug-gsum-brtag-pa*); (27) examination of continuity of the world (in Sanskrit: *Samsāra-santati-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Hjig-rten-rgyud-pa-brtag-pa*); (28) examination of external objects (in Sanskrit: *Vāhyārtha-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Phyi-rol-gyi-don-brtag-pa*); (29) examination of Śruti or Scripture (in Sanskrit: *Śruti-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Thos-pa-brtag-pa*); (30) examination of self-evidence (in Sanskrit: *Svataḥ-prāmāṇya-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Raṅ-la-tshad-ma-brtag-pa*); and (31) examination of the soul which sees things beyond the range of senses (in Sanskrit: *Anyendriyātītārtharāṣana-puruṣa-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Gshan-gyi-dwaṅ-po-laḥ-hdaḥ-pa-brtag-pa*).

KAMALA ŚĪLA (ABOUT 750 A.D.).

129. Kamala Śīla,¹ also called Kamala Śrīla, was a follower of Śānta Raksita. He was for some time a Professor of Tantras in Nālandā whence he was (*vide* Appendix A) invited to Tibet by king Khri-sroṅ-deu-tsan (728—736 A.D.). While in Tibet he vindicated the religious views of Guru Padma-sambhava and Śānta Raksita by defeating and expelling a Chinese monk named Mahāyāna Hoshang. He was of wide fame and the author of the following works:—

130. *Nyāya-bindu pūrva-pakṣe-saṁkṣipta*, called in Tibetan *Rigs-pa-brtag-pa* phyogs-śā-ma-mdor-bḥdus-pa, a summary of criticisms on the *Nyāyabindu* of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, *Mdo, She*, Folios 106—115. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage

¹ *Vide* Pag-sam-jon-zang, part i, p. 112, edited by Sarat Chandra Das, and also the Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, vol. i, part i, p. 10, and Waddell's *Lamaism*, p. 31.

² I have consulted the copy brought down by the British Mission to Tibet in 1904.



Viśuddha Simha and the interpreter monk of Shu-chen named Dpal-rtsegs-rakṣita.

131. Tattva-saṃgraha-pañjikā, called in Tibetan De-kho-na-nid-bśduṣ-paḥi-dkaḥ-hgrel, a commentary on the Tattva-saṃgraha of Sānta Rakṣita. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ of part I of this work in the Tangyur, Mdo, He, Folios 146—400, and part II of it in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ye, Folios 1—385. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Devendra Bhadra and the interpreter monk Grags-hbyor-śeṣ-rab.

KALYĀṆA RAKṢITA (ABOUT 829 A.D.).

132. Kalyāṇa Rakṣita,² called in Tibetan Dge-bśruṅ, was a great dialectician and teacher of Dharmottarācārya. He flourished during the reign of Mahārāja Dharma Pāla who died in 829 A.D. (*Vide* Appendix B). He was the author of the undermentioned works³ :—

133. Vāhyārtha-siddhi-kārikā, called in Tibetan phyi-rol-gyi-don-grub-pa-ceṣ-bya-waḥi-tshig-leḥur, which signifies memorial verses on the reality of external things. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 202—210. The translation was prepared by the Vaibhāṣika teacher Jina Mitra of Kāśmīra and the Tibetan interpreter-monk Dpal-brtsegs-rakṣita.

134. Śruti-parīkṣā, called in Tibetan Thoṣ-pa-brtag-paḥi-tshig-leḥur-byas-pa, which signifies 'memorial verses on the examination of Śruti or verbal testimony.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 210—211.

135. Anyāpoha-vicāra-kārikā, called in Tibetan Gshan-la-brtag-paḥi-tshig-leḥur-byas-pa, which signifies 'memorial verses on the determination of a thing by the exclusion of its opposites.' The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 211—213.

136. Īśvara-bhaṅga-kārikā, called in Tibetan Dwaṅ-phyug-hjig-paḥi-tshig-leḥur-byas-pa, which signifies 'memorial verses

¹ I have consulted this work in the monastery of Labrang, Sikkim, which I visited in June 1907.

² *Vide* Taranatha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 216—219; and *Pag-sam-jon-zang*, p. 114. The particle 'bśruṅ' signifies "protected" and is an equivalent for Sanskrit "Rakṣita." But Schiefner has taken it as an equivalent for "Gupta." This does not seem to be correct, for the Tibetan equivalent for Gupta is "śbas."

³ I have consulted Kalyāṇa Rakṣita's works in volume Ze of the Tangyur lent to me by the India Office, London.



on the refutation of God.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, *Ze*, Folios 214—215.

DHARMOTTARĀCĀRYA (ABOUT 847 A.D.).

137. Dharmottara¹ (Ācārya Dharmottara or Dharmottarācārya) called in Tibetan *Chos-mchog*, was a pupil of Kalyāṇa Rakṣita and of Dharmākara Datta of Kāśmīra. He appears to have flourished in Kāśmīra while Vanapāla was reigning in Bengal about 847 A.D. (*vide* Appendix B), and is mentioned by the Jaina philosophers Mallavādin the author of *Dharmottara-tippanaka* about 962 A.D.² and Ratnaprabha Sūri³ the famous author of *Syādvāda-ratnāvatārikā* dated 1181 A.D. Dharmottara was the author of the following works :—

138. *Nyāya-bindu-tīkā*, called in Tibetan *Rigs-paḥi-thigs-paḥi-rgya-cher-hgre-l-wa*, a detailed commentary on the *Nyāya-bindu* of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work was preserved in the Jaina temple of Sāntinātha, Cambay, and has been published by Professor Peterson in the *Bibliotheca Indica* series of Calcutta. There exists a Tibetan translation⁴ in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, *She*, Folios 43—106. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Jñāna-garbha and an interpreter-monk of Shu-chen named Dharmāloka, and afterwards recast by the Indian sage Sumati-kīrti and the Tibetan interpreter-monk *Blodan-śes-rab*. *Nyāyabindu-tīkā* begins thus :—“Sugata, the conqueror of lust, etc., has overcome this world, the source of series of evils beginning with birth : may his words dispelling the darkness of our mind attain glory.”⁵

¹ *Vide* Taranatha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 225 ; and *Pag-sam-jon-zang*, p. 114.

² The Jaina logician Mallavādin (q. v.) wrote a gloss called *Dharmottara-tippanaka* on Dharmottarācārya's *Nyāyabindutīkā*. The year 884 in which Mallavādin flourished corresponds to 827 A.D. or 962 A.D. according as we take it to refer to *Vikrama-saṃvat* or *Saka-saṃvat*. On one supposition Mallavādin was a contemporary of Dharmottara and on the other he flourished a century later.

³ *अथ धर्मोत्तरानुसारी प्राह । प्रयोजनमादिवाक्येन साक्षादाख्यायते इति न च मे ।* (*Syādvāda-ratnāvatārikā*, p. 10, Jaina yaśovijaya series of Benares).

⁴ I have consulted the copy brought down by the British Mission to Tibet during 1904. The Tibetan version has also been edited by F. J. Sherbatski and printed in Russia.

⁵ *अयं जातिवसनप्रबन्ध-प्रकृतिहेतोर्जगतो विजितुः ।*

रागादिरातेः सुगतस्य वाचो मनसुमस्तानवमादधाना ॥

(*Nyāyabindutīkā*, Chap. I).



139. *Pramāṇa-parīkṣā*, called in Tibetan *Tshad-ma-brtag-pa*, signifying 'an examination of *Pramāṇa* or the sources of valid knowledge.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, *Ze*, Folios 215—237, as well as Folios 238—253. The translation was prepared by monk *Blo-lḍan-śeṣ-rab*.

140. *Apoha-nāma-prakarana*, called in Tibetan *Gshan-sel-wa*, signifying 'a treatise on the determination of a thing by the exclusion of its opposites.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation² in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, *Ze*, Folios 254—266. The translation was prepared by the Kāśmīrian Paṇḍita Bhāgyarāja and the interpreter-monk *Blo-lḍan-śeṣ-rab*, in the incomparable city of Kāśmīra.

141. *Pāra-loka-siddhi*, called in Tibetan *Hjig-rten-pha-rol-grub-pa*, signifying 'proof of the world beyond.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation³ in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, *Ze*, Folios 266—270. The translation was prepared by the great Paṇḍita Bhāgyarāja and the interpreter-monk *Tshab-ñi-ma-grags* during the lifetime of Śrī Harṣa Deva (king of Kāśmīra, 1089—1101 A.D.) in the great incomparable city of Kāśmīra.

The work begins thus:—

"Some say that the world beyond is possessed of the characteristics of a complete separation from the link of consciousness which began from before birth and continued after death, etc."

142. *Kṣaṇa bhaṅga-siddhi*, called in Tibetan *Škaḍ-cig-ma-hjig-pa-grub-pa*, signifying 'proof of the momentariness of things.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁴ in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, *Ze*, Folios 270—282. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Bhāgyarāja and the interpreter-monk *Blo-lḍan-śeṣ-rab*.

143. *Pramāṇa-viniścaya-ṭīkā*, called in Tibetan *Tshad-ma-rnam-ñeṣ-kyi-ṭīkā*, which is a commentary on the *Pramāṇa-viniścaya* of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁵ in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, *Dse*, folio 346 f, and *We*, Folios 1—188. The translation was prepared by the Kāśmīrian Paṇḍita Parahita Bhadra and the Tibetan interpreter *Blo-lḍan-śeṣ-rab* in the model city of Kāśmīra. In the concluding lines of the work

¹ I have consulted the India Office copy.

² I have consulted the India Office copy.

³ I have consulted the India Office copy.

⁴ I have consulted the India Office copy.

⁵ I have consulted the India Office copy.



lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ in the Tangyur, Mdo, She, Folios 205—375. It is divided into four chapters treating respectively of (1) Identity (in Tibetan : Rañ-bshin, and in Sanskrit Svabhāva); (2) Effect (in Tibetan : hbras-bu, and in Sanskrit : Kārya); (3) Non-perception (in Tibetan : Mi-dmigs-pa, and in Sanskrit : Anupalabdhi); and (4) Explanation of Six Characteristics (in Tibetan : Mtshan-ñid-drug-bśad-pa, and in Sanskrit : Ṣaḍ-lakṣaṇa-vyākhyā). In the beginning of the work it is stated that Arcata was a Brāhmaṇa, and from the concluding part it appears that he lived in Kāśmīra. The Tibetan version ends thus :—

“ In the city of Kāśmīra, the pith of Jambudvīpa, the commentary (on the work) of Dharmakīrti, who was the best of sages, was translated. From this translation of Pramāṇa the pith of holy doctrines, let the unlearned derive wisdom.”²

DĀNAŚĪLA (ABOUT 899 A.D.).

148. Dānaśīla,³ also called Dānaśrīla, was born in Kāśmīra about 899 A.D., when Mahī Pāla was reigning in Bengal. He was a contemporary of Parahita Bhadra, Jina Mitra, Sarvajña Deva and Tilopa. He visited Tibet and co-operated in the propaganda of the translations of Sanskrit books into Tibetan. He was the author of the following work on Logic :—

149. Pustaka-pāṭhopāya, called in Tibetan Glegs-bam-bklag-pahi-thabs, signifying the method of reading books. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁴ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folio 270. The translation was prepared by the author himself.

¹ The volume She, containing this work, was brought down by the British Mission to Tibet in 1904. I borrowed it from the Government of India.

འཇམ་གླིང་སྡིང་པོ་ཁ་ཆེན་གྱི་ཁྱེད་ཀྱི་རྒྱུ་ལྟུང་།

མཁས་པའི་སྡིང་པོ་ཆེན་གྱི་གྲགས་པའི་འགྲེལ་།

དམ་ཆེན་སྡིང་པོ་ཆེན་མ་བཞུར་བ་ལས་།

སྡིང་པོ་ཆེན་པ་ནམས་གྱི་སྡིང་པོར་ཤོག་།

(Tangyur, Mdo, She, folio 375).

³ Vide Taranatha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, pp. 225—226; and Pag-sam-jon-zang, p. xlv.

⁴ I have consulted the India Office copy.



JINA MITRA (ABOUT 899 A.D.).

150. Jina Mitra¹ was a native of Kāśmīra who, together with Sarvajña Deva, Dāna-śīla and others, visited Tibet and helped the Tibetans in the work of translating Sanskrit books into Tibetan. Jina Mitra lived about 899 A.D.,² when his contemporary kings Khri-ral (or Ral-pa-can) of Tibet and Mahī Pala of Bengal, died. He wrote the undermentioned work on Logic :—

151. Nyāya-bindu-piṇḍārtha, called in Tibetan Rigṣ-paḥi-thigṣ-paḥi-don-bṣduṣ-pa, which contains the purport of Dharmakīrti's Nyāyabindu. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation³ in the Tangyur, Mdo, She, Folios 115—116. The translation was prepared by the Indian teacher Surendrabodhi, and the interpreter of Shuchen, named Vande-ye-śeṣ-sde.

PRAJÑĀKARA GUPTA (ABOUT 940 A.D.).

152. Prajñākara Gupta,⁴ called in Tibetan Seṣ-rab-hbyuñ-gnas-sbaṣ, lived at the time of Maha Pāla, who died in 940 A.D. He was a lay devotee and quite different from Prajñākara Maṭi, who was a monk and keeper of the southern gate of the university of Vikrama-śīlā during the reign of Canaka in 983 A.D. (Vide Appendix C). Prajñākara Gupta was the author of the following works :—

153. Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra, called in Tibetan Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-rgyan, which is a commentary on the Pramāṇa-vārtika of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁵ which is divided into two parts. The first part extends over Folios 1—352 of volume Te, and the second part Folios 1—328 of volume She of the Tangyur, section Mdo. The translation was prepared by the great Kāśmīrian Paṇḍita Bhāgya-rāja and the Tibetan interpreter Blo-lḍan-śeṣ-rab. Subsequently, it was looked through by Sumati and the interpreter Blo-lḍan-śeṣ-rab. The translation has the advantage of having been assisted by numerous sages of the great monastery of Vikramaśīlā in Middle India,

¹ Vide Taranatha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, p. 226 ; and Pag-sam-jon-zang, pp. xevi, 115.

² Vide Csoma de Koros's Tibetan Grammar, p. 183.

³ I have consulted the India Office copy.

⁴ Vide Taranatha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, pp. 230, 235 ; and Pag-sam-jon-zang, p. 116.

⁵ I have consulted this work in the monastery of Labrang in Sikkim, which I visited in June, 1907.



under the supervision of the great wise Paṇḍita Śrī Sunaya-śrī Mitra and also of the wise Paṇḍita Kumāraśrī of the model city of Kāśmīra.

154. *Sahāvalambha-niścaya*, called in Tibetan *Lhan-cig-dmigs-pa-ñes-pa*, signifying "the ascertainment of objects and their knowledge arising together." The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 301—308. The translation was prepared by the Nepalese Paṇḍita Sānti Bhadra and the Tibetan interpreter-monk Sākya-hoḍ of the village of Señ-dkar in the province of Hbro (Do).

ĀCĀRYA JETĀRI (940—980 A.D.).

155. Jetāri² or Ācārya Jetāri, called in Tibetan *Dgra-las-rgyal-wa*, was born of a Brāhmaṇa family. His father, Garbhapāda, lived in Vārendra at the court of Rājā Sanātana, who was a vassal to the Pala kings of Magadha. Being expelled by his kinsmen, Jetāri became a Buddhist devotee and worshipped Mañjuśrī, by whose grace he became a perfect master of sciences. He received from king Maha Pāla the royal diploma of Paṇḍita of the university of Vikramaśilā.

156. The famous Dīpaṅkara or Śrījñāna Atiśa is said, when very young, to have learnt five minor sciences from Jetāri. Maha Pāla reigned up to 940 A.D. (*vide* Appendix B), and Dīpaṅkara was born in 980 A.D.³ Their contemporary, Jetāri, must have lived between those dates.

He was the author of the following works⁴ on Logic :—

157. *Hetu-tattva-upadeśa*, called in Tibetan *Gtan-tshigs-kyi-de-kho-na-ñid-ḥstan-pa*, signifying "instruction on the real nature of the middle term in a syllogism." The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 344—354. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Paṇḍita Kumāra-kalasa and the Tibetan interpreter-monk Sākya-hoḍ.

158. *Dharma-dharmi-viniścaya*, called in Tibetan *Chos-dañ-chos-can-gtan-la-ñwab-pa*, signifying "determination of the minor and major terms." The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 354—359.

¹ I have consulted the India Office copy.

² *Vide* Taranatha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus* von Schiefner, pp. 230—233; and *Pag-sam-jon-zang*, p. 116.

³ *Vide* the "Journal" of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, vol. i, part i, p. 8.

⁴ The Volume Ze, of the Tangyur, Mdo, containing Jetāri's works, was lent to me by the India Office, London.



159. **Bālāvatāra-tarka**, called in Tibetan **Biṣ-wa-hjug-pahi-rtog-ge**, signifying "children's introduction to Logic." The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the **Tangyur**, **Mdo**, **Ze**, Folios 359—372. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage **Nāga Raksita** and the Tibetan interpreter of the province of **Sum-pa** (in **Amdo**) named **Dpal-mchog-dan-po-hi-rdo-rje**. The work begins thus:—

"Who by the lustre of his sermon has completely dispersed and cleared the veil of the gloom of ignorance, who is a single lamp to three worlds—may that **Bhagavān** long remain victorious."¹ It consists of three chapters named respectively: (1) Perception; (2) Inference for one's own self; and (3) Inference for the sake of others.

JINA (ABOUT 983 A.D.).

160. **Jina**, called in Tibetan **Rgyal-wa-can**, was the author of the following work:—

Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra-ṭikā, called in Tibetan **Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-hgrel gyi-rgyan-gyi-hgrel-bśad**, a voluminous work, the Tibetan version of which occupies volumes **De** and **Ne** of the **Tangyur**, section **Mdo**. This version was prepared by **Paṇḍita Dīpaṅkara** of **Vikramaśilā** (who arrived in Tibet in 1040 A.D.) and the Tibetan interpreter, **Byan-chub-ṣeṅ-rab** of **Shaa-shuñ**.

161. **Jina**, the author of the original work, is probably the same as **Jina Bhadra** of **Koṅkana**,² who was a contemporary of **Vāgīśvarakīrti**, about 983 A.D. (*Vide* Appendix C).

JÑĀNA-ŚRĪ (ABOUT 983 A.D.).

162. **Jñāna-śrī**, or rather **Jñāna-śrī Mitra**³ (probably the same as **Jñāna-śrī Bhadra**, who worked in **Kāśmīra**), was born in **Gauḍa**. He was at first admitted into the **Srāvaka** school of

གང་གིས་གསུང་རབ་འོད་ཟེར་གྱི་སྒྲིབ་གིས་॥

སྒྲིབ་པའི་རབ་འོད་ནས་པར་གྱོལ་མཛད་གསལ་॥

ས་གསུམ་གནས་ན་སྒྲིབ་ས་གཅིག་གྱུ་ཡི་॥

བཅོས་ཇུན་འདས་དོ་ཡུན་རིང་གྱུལ་གཏར་ཅིག་॥

(*Tangyur*, **Mdo**, **Ze**, folio 359).

¹ *Vide* **Tārānātha's** *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 235.

² *Vide* **Tārānātha's** *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 235—242; and **Pagsam-jon-zang**, pp. 117—120.



Buddhism, but afterwards imbibed faith in the Mahāyāna. Dīpaṅkara or Śrī-jñāna Atiśa (born in 980 A.D.) is said to have been much indebted to him. Jñāna-śrī Mitra was appointed a gate-keeper of the university of Vikramaśilā by Candaka who reigned in Magadha up to 983 A.D. (*Vide* Appendices B and C). The Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya in the 14th century quotes ¹ Jñāna-śrī, who is perhaps the same as Jñāna-śrī Mitra. He was the author of the following works on Logic :—

163. *Pramāṇa-viniścaya-tīkā*,² called in Tibetan *Tshad-ma-rnam-par-ñes-paḥi-hgrel-bśad*, which is a commentary on the *Pramāṇa-viniścaya* of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, *Dse*, Folios 1—346, and *We*, Folios 188—322. The translation was prepared by the author ³ himself with the co-operation of the interpreter-monk Choṣ-kyi-brtson-hgrus.

164. *Kārya-kāraṇa-bhāva-siddhi*,⁴ called in Tibetan *Rgyu-daṅ-hbras-buḥi-ño-wo-grub-pa*, signifying 'establishment of the relation of cause and effect.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation ⁵ in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, *Ze*, Folios 413—418. The translation was prepared by the great Indian sage Kumāra Kalasa and the interpreter-monk Sākya-hoḍ. Subsequently, it was re-touched and published by the Nepalese Paṇḍita Ananta-śrī and the interpreter-monk aforementioned.

165. *Tarka-bhāṣā*, called in Tibetan *Rtog-gehi-skad*, signifying 'technicalities of logic.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation ⁶ in

¹ *Vide* the *Sarvadarśana-saṃgraha*, chapter on *Bauddha-darśana* :—

तदुक्तं ज्ञानप्रिया

यत् सत् तत् सत् सत्किं यथा जलधरः सन्नद्य भावा जमी ।

सत्तामक्तिरिदार्थकस्यापि मितेः सिद्धेः सिद्धा न सा ॥

नाप्येकैव विधान्यथा परकृतेनापि क्रियादिभवेत् ।

इहापि सणभद्रमन्त्रिरतः साधे च विश्राम्यति ॥

² I have consulted the Tibetan version of this work in the monastery of Labrang in Sikkim.

³ The author of the *Pramāṇa-viniścaya-tīkā* is called Jñānaśrī Bhadra and also simply Jñāna-śrī. He is stated in the Colophon of the work to have been a native of Kāśmīra. *Vide* Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's "Indian Logic as preserved in Tibet, No. 3" in the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, New Series, vol. iii, No. 7, 1907. Jñāna-śrī Mitra, of Gauḍa, seems to be the same as Jñāna-śrī Bhadra, of Kāśmīra, who may have left Gauḍa to live in Kāśmīra.

⁴ The author of this work is named Jñāna-śrī Mitra.

⁵ I have consulted the India Office copy.

⁶ I have consulted the India Office copy.

the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 373—413. The translation was prepared by the interpreter-monk Dpal-ldan-blo-gros-brtan-pa. The work is divided into three chapters named respectively: (1) Perception; (2) Inference for one's own self; and (3) Inference for the sake of others. It begins thus:—"Bowling down to the teacher, the lord of the world, I elucidate Tarkabhāṣā (the technicalities of logic) for the sake of introducing children of small intellect to the system of Dharmakīrti."¹

RATNA VAJRA (ABOUT 983 A.D.).

166. Ratnavajra,² called in Tibetan Rin-chen-rdo-rje, was born in a Brāhmaṇa family in Kāśmīra. His ancestors were deeply versed in the śāstra of the Tīrthikas. His father, Hari Bhadra, was the first convert to Buddhism in his family. Ratnavajra, who was an upāsaka (lay devotee), studied by himself up to the 36th year of his life all the Buddhist sūtras, mantras, and sciences. After this he came to Magadha and Vajrāsana (Buddha-Gayā) where he beheld the face of Cakra-saṃvara, Vajravārāhī and many other deities, by whose grace he completely mastered the Buddhist śāstras. He received the royal diploma of the university of Vikramaśilā and was appointed a gate-keeper of the university (*vide* Appendix C). Afterwards he came back to Kāśmīra, whence he went through Udyāna (Kabul) to Tibet, where he was known by the name of Ācārya. He flourished during the reign of Canaka about 983 A.D. (*Vide* Appendices B and C). He was the author of the following work:—

167. Yukti-prayoga, called in Tibetan Riggs-pahi-sbyor-wa, signifying "application of reasoning." The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation³ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 372—373. The

ཐཱ་མ་འཛིག་དེན་དབང་བདུད་ནས།

བྱིས་པ་ཡིད་གཞུངས་རྒྱུང་པ་ནསས།

ཆོས་བྱི་བྲགས་པའི་ལྷགས་མཉན་ཕྱིར།

དོག་གའི་སྐད་ནི་རབ་གསལ་བྱ།

(Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, folio 373).

² *Vide* Taranatha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, p. 240.

³ I have consulted the Tibetan version in the possession of the India Office, London.



translation was prepared by the Indian sage Śrī Subhūti-śānta and the interpreter-monk of Shu-chen, named Tiā-ñe-hsin-bzan-po.

RATNĀKARA SĀNTI (ABOUT 983 A.D.).

168. Ratnākara Sānti¹ was known to the Tibetans as Ācārya Sānti or simply Sāntipa. He was ordained in the order of the Sarvāstivāda school of Odantapura, and learnt the Sūtra and Tantra at Vikramaśilā from Jetāri, Ratna-kīrti² and others. Thereafter he was appointed by king Canaka (who died in 983 A.D.) to be a gate-keeper of the University of Vikramaśilā (*vide* Appendix C), where he defeated the Tīrthika disputants. At the invitation of the king of Ceylon he visited that island where he spread the Buddhist doctrine. He was the author of a work on *Chanda* (prosody) called Chando-ratnākara³ and of the following works⁴ on Logic:—

169. Vijñapti-mātra siddhi, called in Tibetan Rnam-par-rig-pa-tsam-ñid-du-grub-pa, signifying 'establishment of a mere communication of knowledge.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 335—338. The translation was prepared by the Nepalese Paṇḍita Sānti Bhadra, and the Tibetan interpreter-monk Sākya-hoḍ of the province of Hbro (Do). Subsequently, it was published by the same Paṇḍita and Klog-skyā-śes-rab-brtsegs.

170. Antar-vyāpti,⁵ called in Tibetan Nan-gi-khyab-pa,

¹ *Vide* Taranatha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 234, 235 and *Pag-sam-jon-zang*, pp. 117, ex. The Tibetan equivalent for the

name Ratnākara Sānti is རིན་ཆེན་འབྲུང་གནས་ནི་བ།

² This Ratnakīrti is different from the sage of that name who was patronised by King Vimala Candra about 650 A.D. (*vide* Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 172, 174, and my discussion in art. 108 under the head Vinīta Deva in the *Buddhist Logic*). This earlier Ratnakīrti, known through a commentary on the *Madhyamakāvatāra*, wrote *Kalyāṇa-kāṇḍa* and *Dharmavini-caya* embodied in the *Tangyur Mdo, Ku*. The same Ratnakīrti was perhaps the author of *Apohasiddhi* and *Kṣanabhaṅgasiddhi* which are being published in the *Bibliotheca Indica* series of Calcutta under the editorship of M. M. Hara Prasād Sāstri. Two other works called *Sthira-dūṣaṇa* and *Vicitrādvaita-siddhi* are ascribed to him.

³ For an account of the *Chandoratnākara* see Satishchandra Vidya-bhusana's "Sanskrit works on Literature, Grammar, Rhetoric and Lexicography as preserved in Tibet" in *J. A. S. B.*, new series, vol. III, no. 2, 1907.

⁴ The volume *Ze* of the *Tangyur*, section *Mdo*, containing Ratnākara Sānti's works, was lent to me by the India Office, London.

⁵ The Sanskrit original of 'Antarvyāpti' or more fully 'Antarvyāpti-

signifying 'internal inseparable connection.' It is embodied in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 338—344. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Kumāra Kalasa and the interpreter-monk Sākya-hoḍ.

VĀK-PRAJA (ABOUT 983 A.D.).

171. In the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 201—202 there is the Tibetan version¹ of the Sarvajña-siddhi-kārikā, called in Tibetan Thams-cad-ukhyen-pa-grub-paḥi-tshig-lehur-byas-pa, signifying 'memorial verses on the attainment of omniscience.' The author of this work is named in Tibetan Śag-hbañs which may be restored in Sanskrit as Vāk-praja. If he is the same as Vāgīśvara-kīrti, he must have lived about 983 A.D. (*vide* Appendix C).

YAMĀRI (ABOUT 1050 A.D.).

172. Yamāri was specially versed in Grammar and Logic. But he was very poor. Once, being unable to support his family and children, he came to Vajrāsana (Buddha-Gayā). There he related his poverty to a Yogin, who replied: "You Paṇḍits despise Yogins and do not solicit dharma from them, hence this has come to pass." Saying this, he uttered the Vasudhara benediction in virtue of which Yamāri rose to opulence. He afterwards received the royal diploma of the university of Vikramaśilā.² He lived during the time of Naya Pāla who died in 1050 A.D. (*vide* Appendix B). He was the author of the following work:—

173. Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra-ṭīkā, called in Tibetan Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-hgrel-rgyan-gyi-hgrel-bḥad, which is an annotation on the Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra of Prajñākara Gupta. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a very voluminous Tibetan translation which covers volumes Be, Me, and Tse of the Tangyur, Mdo. The translation was prepared by Paṇḍita Sumatī and the interpreter Blo-

samarthana' has recently been recovered from Nepal by M. M. Hara Prasad Sastri, M.A., of Calcutta, and is deposited in the Library of the Asiatic Society of Bengal. It begins thus:—*एह सत्त्वमर्थक्रियाकारितं तदितरल्लक्षणयोगात् । तच्च कर्मयोगपद्याभ्यां व्याप्तं परस्परव्यवच्छेदलक्षणत्वादनयोः । प्रकारान्तरेण करणसम्भवात् ।* It ends thus:—*अन्तर्यामिसमर्थनं समाप्तमिति । कृतिरियं रत्नाकरमालिपादानाम् ॥*

¹ I have consulted the copy belonging to the India Office, London.

² *Vide* Taranātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 247, 253.



ldan-śeṣ-rab in the monastery of Sñe-thañ near Lhasa. The volume Be ends thus :—" From the immeasurable merit acquired by me by composing this regular annotation, may the world, subduing its adversary death, obtain the indestructible and perfected Nirvāṇa." ¹

SAṆKARĀNANDA (ABOUT (1050 A.D.).

174. Saṅkarānanda,² called in Tibetan Bde-byed-dgaḥ-wa, was born in a Brāhmaṇa family in Kāśmīra. He was learned in all sciences, and was above all an expert in Logic. He intended to write an original work on Logic refuting Dharmakīrti, but in a dream he was told by Mañjuśrī : " Since Dharmakīrti is an Ārya (a Buddhist monk), one cannot refute him, and if thou seest mistake in him, it is the mistake of thine own understanding." Thereupon Saṅkarānanda repented and composed a commentary on Dharmakīrti's Pramāṇa-vārtika in seven chapters. He flourished³ during the time of Naya Pāla, who reigned until 1050 A.D. He was the author of the following works on Logic :—

175. Pramāṇa-vārtika-tikā, called in Tibetan Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-hgrel-hśaḍ, being an annotation on the Pramāṇa-vārtika of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁴ which covers volumes Pe and Phe of the Tangyur, Mdo.

176. Sambandha-parīkṣānusāra, called in Tibetan Hbrel-pa-brtag-paḥi-rjes-su-hbraṇ-wa, which is a commentary on the

¹ རྒྱལ་བཞིན་ཏེ་ཀུ་འདི་ནི་བྱས་བཤས།
བསོད་ནམས་ཚད་མེད་བསགས་བ་གང་ཡིན་པ།
རེས་ནི་འཇིག་རྟེན་གཤམ་མེད་ཅེས་དགྲ་འཇོམས་ནི།
མི་ཟད་རབ་བསྐྱབ་གཉིས་མེད་ཐོབ་པར་ཤོག།

(Tangyur, Mdo, Be, folio 303).

² Vide Taranatha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, pp. 247, 349; and Pa-sam-jon-zang, pp. 107, 120.

³ Some maintain that Saṅkarānanda was a personal pupil of Dharmakīrti. On this point Lama Taranatha observes :—" The Brāhmaṇa Saṅkarānanda appeared at a much later time, and to call him a personal pupil of Dharmakīrti would be a great confusion."—Taranatha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, p. 188.

⁴ I have consulted this work in the monastery of Labrang, in Sikkim, in 1907.



- Sambandha-parīkṣā of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 24—39. The translation was prepared by the great Indian Paṇḍita Parahita, and the Tibetan interpreter-monk Dgaḥ-waḥi rdo-rje.

- The work begins thus :—

“ By whom connection with the world has been renounced, in whom there are no “ I ” and “ mine,” who is called free from concerns—to that Omniscient One I bow down.”²

177. *Apohasiddhi*, called in Tibetan *Sel-wa-grub-pa*, signifying ‘ establishment of a thing by the exclusion of its opposites.’ The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation³ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 308—334. The translation was prepared by the Kāśmīrian Paṇḍita Manoratha and the Tibetan interpreter Blo-dan-śes-rab in the incomparable city of Kāśmīra.

The work opens thus :—

“ The Omniscient One who is free from all mistakes and who looks to the interests of living beings in all times, saluting him and relying on his mercy, I elucidate the puzzle of ‘ self ’ and ‘ others ’ connected with the doctrine of *Apoha*.”⁴

• 1 I have consulted the Tibetan version in the possession of India Office, London.

² བཀའ་གིས་འབྲེལ་བ་སྦྱངས་གྱུར་བ།
འགྲོ་བ་བདག་དང་བདག་གི་མི།
བཟུང་འཛིན་མེད་པ་ཅན་གསུངས་པ།
ཀུན་མཁྱེན་དེ་ལ་བྱུག་འཆལ་ལོ།

(Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, folio 24).

• 3 I have consulted the India Office copy.

⁴ ཀུན་མཁྱེན་འབྲུལ་བྲལ་དུས་གསུམ་གནས་པ་ཡི།
དོན་ནམས་ཇི་གཞིན་གཟིགས་པ་ལ་བརྟུན་དེ།
བརྩེ་ལ་གནས་ནས་སེལ་བ་ལ་བརྟེན་པ་འི།
བདག་གཞན་རབ་དུ་སྦྱ་བའི་འབྲུལ་བསལ་བྱས།

(Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, folio 308).



178. **Pratibandha-siddhi**, called in Tibetan **Hbrel-pa-grub-pa**, signifying "establishment of the causal connection." The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation ¹ in the **Tangyur**, **Mdo**, **Ze**, **Folios** 334—335. The translation was prepared by **Paṇḍita Bhāgya-rāja** and the interpreter **Blo-ldan-śes-rab**.

¹ I have consulted the India Office copy.



APPENDIX A.

THE UNIVERSITY OF NĀLANDĀ.

(About 300—850 A.D.).

Nālandā was a village which is identified with modern Baragaon,¹ 7 miles north of Rajgir, in Behar. Though occasionally mentioned in the Pāli literature, Nālandā was not of great importance before the rise of the Mahāyāna at the beginning of the Christian era. Nāgārjuna, about 300 A.D., and Ārya Deva, about 320 A.D., were the earliest scholars to take interest in the educational institution at that village. A Brāhmaṇa named Suviṣṇu, a contemporary of Nāgārjuna, is said to have established 108 temples there in order that the Abhidharma of the Mahāyāna might not decline.² About 400 A.D., the Chinese pilgrim, Fahian,³ visited this place, which he calls "the village of Nalo." He saw there a tower which had been erected on the spot where Sāriputra, the right-hand disciple of Buddha, had entered Nirvāṇa. Early in the 7th century A.D., another Chinese pilgrim, the famous Hwen-thsang, visited Nālandā and halted⁴ there 15 months to study the Sanskrit language under Śīlabhadra. According to him⁵ the site of Nālandā was originally a mango garden which was bought by 500 merchants at a cost of ten crores of gold pieces and given to Buddha.⁶ After the Nirvāṇa of Buddha, five kings, named Śakrāditya Buddha Gupta, Tathāgata Gupta, Bālāditya, and Vajra, built five Saṅghārāma or monasteries at Nālandā. A king of Central India established another magnificent monastery, and began to build round these edifices a high wall with one gate. A long succession of kings continued the work of building, using all the skill of the sculptor, till at the time of Hwen-thsang in 637 A.D. the whole was "truly marvellous to behold." In the estab-

¹ *Vide* Cunningham's *Ancient Geography of India*, p. 468.

² *Vide* Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 70—86.

³ *Vide* Beal's *Fa-hian*, p. 111.

⁴ *Vide* Cunningham's *Ancient Geography of India*, p. x.

⁵ *Vide* Beal's *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, vol. ii, pp. 168—170.

⁶ It must have been given to a Buddhist saint of a later age and not to Buddha himself.



lishment were some thousands of monks, all men of great ability and learning. They were very strict in observing the rules of Vinaya, and were looked up to as models by all India. Learning and discussing they found the day too short, day and night they admonished each other, juniors and seniors mutually helping to perfection. Learned men from different cities came to Nālandā to acquire renown, and some persons even usurped the name of Nālandā students in order that they might be received everywhere with honour. "Of those from abroad who wished to enter the schools of discussion, the majority, beaten by the difficulties of the problems, withdrew; and those who were deeply versed in old and modern learning were admitted, only two or three out of ten succeeding."¹ Hwen-thsang mentions some celebrated men of Nālandā, such as Dharmapāla and Candrapāla, Guṇamati and Sthiramati,² Prabhāmitra and Jinamitra, and Jñānacandra and Śīlabhadra.

Another Chinese pilgrim named I-tsing, who resided in Nālandā for ten years (probably 675—685 A.D.), says that there were eight halls and 300 apartments in the monastery of Nālandā with more than 3,000 resident monks. The lands in its possession contained more than 200 villages which had been bestowed upon the monastery by kings of different generations.³

Nālandā assumed the character of a university from about 450 A.D. Bālāditya, king of Magadha, who built a monastery at Nālandā, was a contemporary of the Hun king Mihirakula, who reigned first in Śākala and afterwards in Kāśmīra. Now Mihirakula⁴ began his reign in 515 A.D., and his contemporary, Bālāditya, must also have lived about that time. There were three predecessors of Bālāditya who built monasteries at Nālandā. Of them, the earliest, named Śakrāditya, must have reigned about 450 A.D. if we suppose 25 years as the average duration of the reign of each of them. The year 450 A.D. is then the earliest limit which we can roughly assign to the royal recognition of Nālandā. The latest limit which we know with certainty is 750 A.D., when Kamalaśīla (*q. v.*) was the professor of Tantras at Nālandā. But as we read in the accounts of Vikramaśīla that there was for some time an intercourse between that university

¹ *Vide* Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," vol. ii, pp. 164—165.

² This Sthiramati seemed to be the one mentioned by I-tsing (*vide* Takakusu, p. 181). He flourished after Aśaṅga and Vasubandhu.

³ *Vide* Takakusu's I-tsing, pp. xxxiii, 65 and 154.

⁴ *Vide* Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," vol. i, p. 289.

Takakusu, in his "Paramārtha's Life of Vasubandhu," published in the "Journal" of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, January 1905, maintains that Bālāditya came to the throne in 481 A.D., but this statement is by no means final. The date (452—480 A.D.) of Vikramāditya, Bālāditya's father, is also open to dispute.



and Nālandā, we may suppose that the latter continued to exist approximately until 850 A.D.

According to Tibetan accounts¹ the quarter in which the Nālandā University, with its grand library, was located, was called Dharmagañja (Piety Mart). It consisted of three grand buildings called Ratnasāgara, Ratnodadhi, and Ratnarañjaka, respectively. In Ratnodadhi, which was nine-storeyed, there were the sacred scripts called Prajñāpāramitā-sūtra, and Tāntrik works such as Samāja-guhya, etc. After the Turuṣka raiders had made incursions in Nālandā, the temples and *Caityas* there were repaired by a sage named Mudita Bhadra. Soon after this, Kukutasiddha, minister of the king of Magadha, erected a temple at Nālandā, and while a religious sermon was being delivered there, two very indigent Tīrthika mendicants appeared. Some naughty young novice-monks in disdain threw washing-water on them. This made them very angry. After propitiating the sun for 12 years, they performed a *yajña*, fire-sacrifice, and threw living embers and ashes from the sacrificial pit into the Buddhist temples, etc. This produced a great conflagration which consumed Ratnodadhi. It is, however, said that many of the Buddhist scriptures were saved by water which leaked through the sacred volumes of Prajñāpāramitā-sūtra and Tantra.

¹ Vide Pag-sam jon-zang, edited in the original Tibetan by Rai Sarat Chandra Das, Bahadur, C.I.E., at Calcutta, p. 92.



APPENDIX B.

A LIST OF KINGS OF THE PĀLA DYNASTY OF BENGAL AND BEHAR.

(From Tibetan sources).

In the Tibetan books,¹ such as *Pag-sam-jon-zang*, *Lama Tārānātha's Chos-byuñ*, etc., we find a short account of the kings of the Pāla dynasty of Bengal. Go Pāla, the founder of the dynasty, lived principally in Pundravardhana. His successor, Deva Pāla, annexed Varendra to his kingdom. Deva Pāla's grandson, Dharma Pāla, conquered Magadha and annexed it to Bengal. Dharma Pāla's power is said to have extended in the east to the ocean, in the west to Delhi, in the north to Jālandhara, and in the south to the Vindhya ranges. It is stated that during his reign Sānta Rakṣita died. Now Sānta Rakṣita visited Tibet during the reign of Thi-srong-deu-tsan in 749 A.D., and worked there for 13 years, that is, till 762 A.D. His death must therefore have taken place after 762 A.D. Dīpaṅkara Śrījñāna, *alias* Atiśa, High-priest of Vikramaśilā, who was a contemporary of king Naya Pāla of Magadha, visited Tibet in company with Nag-tsho-lotsava in 1040 A.D. during the reign of Lha-tsun-byañ-chub, son of Lha-lama-ye-śeṣ-hoḍ, who held his court at Tholing in Nāri. These facts throw a good deal of light on the dates of the Pāla kings.² It is further stated that the death of Mahī Pāla is exactly synchronous with that of the Tibetan king Khri-ral. Now Khri-ral (or Ral-pa-can) died in 899 A.D.³ This fixes the date of the death of Mahī Pāla. As the period of reign of each of the kings that preceded and succeeded Mahī Pāla is definitely stated by Lama Tārānātha, and also by the author of the *Pag-sam-jon-zang*, there is no difficulty in ascertaining the dates of the Pāla kings. Proceeding in this way, we can fix the dates as follows :—

1. Go Pāla	..	..	660—705 A.D.
2. Deva Pāla	..	..	705—753 A.D.

¹ Vide Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus* von Schiefner, pp. 202—252; and *Pag-sam-jon-zang*, edited by Rai Sarat Chandra Das, Bahadur, C.I.E., pp. 112—121.

² Vide the 16th volume of *Klon-rdol-gsuñ-hbum*, and Sarat Chandra Das's "Indian Pandits in the Land of Snow," pp. 50—76.

³ Vide the Chronological Table extracted from the *Vaiduryakarpo* in Csoma de Koros's *Tibetan Grammar*, p. 183.



3.	Rasa Pāla	..	..	753—765	A.D.
4.	Dharma Pāla	..	..	765—829	A.D.
5.	Masu Rakṣita	..	..	829—837	A.D.
6.	Vana Pāla	..	..	837—847	A.D.
7.	Mahī Pāla	..	..	847—899	A.D.
8.	Mahā Pāla	..	..	899—940	A.D.
9.	Sāmu Pāla ¹	..	..	940—952	A.D.
10.	Sreṣṭha Pāla or Praiṣṭha Pāla	..	..	952—955	A.D.
11.	Canaka	..	..	955—983	A.D.
12.	Bhaya Pāla	..	..	983—1015	A.D.
13.	Naya Pāla	..	..	1015—1050	A.D.
14.	Āmra Pāla	..	..	1050—1063	A.D.
15.	Hasti Pāla	..	..	1063—1078	A.D.
16.	Kṣānti Pāla	..	..	1078—1092	A.D.
17.	Rāma Pāla	..	..	1092—1138	A.D.
18.	Yakṣa Pāla	..	..	1138—1139	A.D.

The researches on the Pāla kings, by the late Dr. Rājendra Lāl Mitra, arrived at a conclusion which is somewhat different from mine. Dr. Mitra's list of Pāla kings² is given below :—

1.	Go Pāla	..	..	855—875	A.D.
2.	Dharma Pāla	..	..	875—895	A.D.
3.	Deva Pāla	..	..	895—915	A.D.
4.	Vigraha Pāla I	..	..	915—935	A.D.
5.	Nārāyaṇa Pāla	..	..	935—955	A.D.
6.	Rāja Pāla	..	..	955—975	A.D.
7.	.... Pāla	..	..	975—995	A.D.
8.	Vigraha Pāla II	..	..	995—1015	A.D.
9.	Mahī Pāla	..	..	1015—1040	A.D.
10.	Naya Pāla	..	..	1040—1060	A.D.
11.	Vigraha Pāla III	..	..	1060—1080	A.D.

¹ Probably the same as Nārāyaṇa Pāla who, in the Bhagalpur plate, is styled "the lord of Aṅga."

² Vide Dr. Rājendra Lāl Mitra's "Indo-Aryans," vol. ii, p. 232.



APPENDIX C.

THE ROYAL UNIVERSITY OF VIKRAMASĪLĀ.

(About 800—1200 A.D.).

Vikramaśilā,¹ mentioned in Sanskrit Sragdharāstotra-ṭīkā,² Vṛhat-svayambhū-purāṇa,³ Tibetan Tangyur,⁴ etc., was a great collegiate monastery, or rather University, founded by king Dharma Pāla at the close of the 8th century A.D. It was situated on a precipitous hill⁵ in Behar at the right bank of the Ganges, possibly at Sila-saṅgama, now called Pātharghātā, near Colgong in the Bhagalpur district. Dharmapāla endowed

¹ Vide Tārānātha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, pp. 234-242, 259-261; Pag-sam-jon-zang, pp. 113, 117, 118; and Sarat Chandra Das's article in the "Journal" of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, vol. i, part i, pp. 10—12; and his "Indian Pandits in the Land of Snow," pp. 50—76.

² The colophon of the Sragdharā-stotra-ṭīkā runs as follows:—

श्रीमद्विक्रमशैलदेवमहाविहारोय राजगृहपण्डितभिक्षु श्रीजिनरत्नितल्लता बालाक-
स्तुतिटीका परिममाला (Sragdharā-stotra, edited in the Bibliotheca Indica series by Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana, p. 50).

³ वाराणस्यां नगर्यां च विहारे यत्र ध्यात्मिके ।

तदा विक्रमशैलसि विहारे वसदुत्तमः ॥

धर्मश्रीमित्री नामोऽयं भिक्षुः पण्डितकक्षुका ।

धर्मो दिदेशयामास नामसङ्गीति च कथाय ॥

(Vṛhat-svayambhū-

purāṇa, edited by M. M. Hara Prasad Sastri, chap. vi, pp. 320—321).

⁴ Numerous Sanskrit works such as तारैकविंशतिकाङ्गसूत्रे संचेप, तारा-चिरम-
शोचम् etc., were translated into Tibetan in the monastery of Vikrama-
śilā, as is evident from the Tangyur, Rgyud, La, Folios 11—26, 54, etc.

⁵ At the distance of a day's sail below Sultanganj there is a steep hill called Pātharghātā overhanging the Ganges, which here is *uttaravāhīni* (or flows towards the north). This corresponds exactly with the account of Vikramaśilā given in Tibetan books. There are also ruins of Buddhistic images at Pātharghātā. For its old name Silasaṅgama vide Francklin's "Site of Ancient Palibothra," pp. 54—55, Appendix p. xiii. General Cunningham identifies Vikramaśilā with modern Silao, which is a small village three miles to the south of Bargaon (ancient Nālandā) and six miles to the north of Rajgir in the subdivision of Behar (vide Report of the Archaeological Survey, vol. viii, p. 83). But this identification does not tally with the description found in Tibetan books, for the Ganges never passed by Silao, nor is there any hill near to it.

the university with rich grants sufficing for the maintenance of 108 resident monks besides numerous non-resident monks and pilgrims. At the head of the university was always a most learned and pious sage. Thus at the time of Dharma Pāla, Ācārya Buddha-jñāna-pāda directed the affairs of the university, and during 1034—1038 A.D. Dīpaṅkara or Śrījñāna Atiśa was at its head, and Sthavira Ratnākara was the superior of the monastery. The famous Tibetan scholar Nag-tshul-khrim-rgyal-wa, better known as Nag-tsho Lotsava, who came to take Dīpaṅkara Śrījñāna *alias* Atiśa to Tibet, resided in the monastery of Vikramaśilā for three years, 1035—1038 A.D.¹ Kamalakulīśa, Narendra-śrī-jñāna, Dāna Rakṣita, Abhayakara Gupta, Subhakara Gupta, Sunāyakaśrī, Dharmākara Śānti and Śākya-śrī Paṇḍita also belonged to the university of Vikramaśilā. Provision was made specially for the study of grammar, metaphysics (including logic) and ritualistic books. On the walls of the university were painted images of paṇḍitas eminent for their learning and character. The distinguished scholars of the university received a diploma of "Paṇḍita" from the kings themselves. For instance, the distinguished logicians, Ācārya Jetāri of Vārendra and Ratnavajra of Kāśmīra, were granted such a diploma. The most erudite sages were appointed to guard the gates of the university. These were six in number, each of which had to be guarded by scholars designated "Gate-keepers" (called in Tibetan Go-sruñ, corresponding, perhaps, to our Dvāra-paṇḍita). During the reign of Canaka (955—983 A.D.) the undermentioned eminent logicians acted as gate-keepers :—

- | | | |
|---------------------------------|----|-----------------------------|
| (i)—At the eastern gate | .. | Ācārya Ratnākara Śānti. |
| (ii)—At the western gate | .. | Vāgīśvarakīrti, of Benares. |
| (iii)—At the northern gate | .. | The famous Naropa. |
| (iv)—At the southern gate | .. | Prajñākaramati. |
| (v)—At the first central gate | .. | Ratnavajra of Kāśmīra. |
| (vi)—At the second central gate | .. | Jñāna-śrī-mitra of Gauḍa. |

The university of Vikramaśilā is said to have been destroyed by the Mahomedan invader Bakhtiar Khilji² about 1203 A.D. when Śākya-śrī-paṇḍita, of Kāśmīra, was at its head.

¹ Vide Klon-rdol-gauñ-hbum, vol. xvi.

² Vide the Tibetan-English Dictionary compiled by Rai Sarat Chandra Das, p. 869; Waddell's "Lamaism," p. 16.

The Turuṣkas or Mahomedans attacked Magadha several times. Thus Tārānātha, speaking of Ācārya Kamala Rakṣita who was at the head of the Vikramaśilā university at the end of the 10th century A.D., observes :— "A minister of the Turuṣka king, out of the Karna land in the west, together with 500 Turuṣkas, drew to Magadha to plunder. They plundered



the sacrificial materials, but when they began to walk all in a body to the Ācārya (Kamala Rakṣita) the Ācārya got into a rage and walked up along, throwing a jug, filled with water, over which he had spoken the mantras. On the spot a great and indomitable storm collected, out of the wind came forth many black men armed with swords who fell upon the Turuṣkas; the minister himself perished spitting blood, and various contagious illnesses repulsed the others in such a way that none of them could reach their native country, and a great terror came over the Tīrthas and Turuṣkas—Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 266, 261.



GENERAL INDEX.

A

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Abbot	125	Ācārya	76, 80, 83, 102, 103, 121, 131, 136, 139, 151, 152
Ābhāsa	28, 40, 42	Ācārya Bodhisattva	125
Abhāva	10, 24, 42	Ācārya Sānti	140
Abhayadeva	36, 37	Act	29
Abhayagirivāsin	65	Action	8, 32, 95
Abhayakara Gupta	151	Act-fruit	44
Abhayatilakopādhyāya	53	Ādinātha	34
Abhidhammapiṭaka	58, 59, 60, 63, 64	Ādipurāṇa	14, 24, 28, 34
Abhidhammatthasaṅgaha	59	Adrikalpa	81
Abhidhānacintāmaṇi	45	Advaita	23, 27
Abhidharma	121, 145	Advaitavāda	23
Abhidharma-jñāna-prasthāna- śāstra	64, 66	Affirmation	30
Abhidharma-mahāvibhāṣā	64	Affirmative	30, 31, 32
Abhidharma-mahāvibhāṣā- śāstra	63, 66	Āgama	3, 4, 10, 13, 29, 32, 40
Abhidharma-vibhāṣā	63	Āgamābhāsa	33
Abhinibodha	4	Ahmedabad	44
Abhrānta	109	Ain-i-Akbari	40, 41
Absence of connection	97	Ajātaśatru	58
Absence of disconnection	93	Ajīva	8
Absence of inverse disconnec- tion	98	Akalaṅka	25, 26, 27, 28, 33, 37, 40
Absolute	42	Akalaṅkadeva	25, 54
Absolute knowledge	2, 15	Akalaṅkacandra	25
Absolutely	109	Akalaṅkastotra	26
Absolute non-existence	24, 25	Ākāśa	74
Absolute reality	68	Akbar	55
Acandra	112	Akevalajñāna	4
Ācāra	71, 80	Akṣa Candra	69
Ācāra-dinakara	3	Akṣapāda	xvii, 11, 46, 51, 53
Ācārāṅga-sūtra	6	Akṣapāda Gautama	xvii
Ācāra's monastery	80	Ālambana	121
		Ālambana-parīkṣā	101, 120
		Ālambana-parīkṣā-tīkā	120, 121
		Ālambana-parīkṣā-vṛtti	101



	Page		Page
Ālambana-pratyaya-dhyāna- sūtra	101	Aniścita	93
Ālambana-pratyaya-dhyāna- sūtra-vyākhyā	102	Antar	42
Ālaya-vijñāna	71	Antar-vyūpti .. 18, 42, 76, 140	
Alberuni	14	Antarvyūpti-samarthana ..	141
Āloka	xviii	Antecedent	42
Āloka-darpaṇa	xviii	Antecedent non-existence ..	24, 25
Āloka-kaṇṭakoddhāra	xviii	Antiquary, Indian .. 3, 4, 5, 6, 9, 13, 14, 38, 39, 45, 49, 53, 123	
Āloka-rahasya	xviii	Antiquities	68
Āloka-sāra-mañjarī	xviii	Anumāna .. 4, 5, 10, 15, 16, 29, 40, 41, 49, 54, 74, 99, 109	
All-pervading	112	Anumānābhāsa	99
Alwis, Dr.	58	Anupalabdhi .. 30, 42, 110, 111, 117, 134	
Amaracandra	47, 48	Anuṣṭubh	84
Amarasvāmi-carita	49	Anuyoga-dvāra-sūtra	4
Amarāvati	68	Anvayi	31
Ambiguous	95, 113	Ānvīkṣikī	xvii
Ambrosia	122	Anyāpoha	24
Amdo	137	Anyāpoha-vicāra-kārikā ..	130
Āmra Pāla	149	Anyonyābhāva	24
Anadhyavasāya	40	Aparāntaka	69
Anahillapurapattana	38, 53	Aparaśaila	65
Anaikāntika	19, 113	Aparaseliya	58
Analysis	100	Apoha	143
Analysis of wheel	100	Apoha-nāma-prakaraṇa ..	132
Analogy	74, 75	Apohasiddhi	140, 143
Ānanda Sūri	47, 48	Apparent	95
Ananta-śrī	138	Appendix 145, 148, 150	
Anantavīrya	28, 37, 38	Application 16, 31, 32, 42	
Ananvaya	19, 97, 116	Application of reason	61
Ancient	xvii	Apprehend	95
Ancient school	xvii	Apprehension	10
Andhra 68, 78, 81, 82		Apradarśitānvaya	20, 116
Anecdota Oxoniensia	75	Apradarśitavyatireka	21
Anekānta-Jaina-mata- vyavasthā	54	Āpta-mīmāṃsā .. 23, 24, 25, 26, 27	
Anekārthasaṃgraha	45	Āpta-mīmāṃsāśāhīkṛti ..	26
Aṅga	3, 149	Āpta-mīmāṃsāśāhīkṛti-tīkā ..	23
Aṅguttara Nikāya	59	Āpta-mīmāṃsā-vivaraṇa ..	54
Anhilwad	35	Āpta-parīkṣā	27
Anhilwad Patan	35	Arāsana	30



	Page		Page
Bāṇa	34	Bharṣa	123, 124
Bandha	8	Bhartṛhari	26, 27, 28, 34, 102, 105, 119
Baragaon	145, 150	Bhā-sarvajña	53
Barisal	122	Bhāsvāmin	22
Baroda	55	Bhāṣya	8, 10, 12, 122
Basket	58	Bhaṭṭa	34, 81
Bauddha	46, 49, 54	Bhāṭṭa	54
Bauddhadarśana	49, 66, 67, 68, 82, 105, 107, 133, 138	Bhaṭṭapāda	51
Bdag	127, 128	Bhaṭṭāraka	54
Bdag-gi-don-gyi-rjes-su-dpag-pa	109	Bhāva	11, 24
Bde-bye(-dgaḥ-wa)	142	Bhavanagara	13, 46
Beal, Rev. xix, 14, 62, 63, 66, 67, 68, 69, 71, 72, 74, 75, 80, 82, 145		Bhavānanda	xviii
Bedā vṛtti	102	Bhavānandivyaḥkhyā	xviii
Behar xx, 57, 103, 145, 148, 150		Bhaya Pāla	149
Belief	91	Bhikṣu	61, 69, 99
Benares xiii, xiv, 6, 8, 39, 50, 51, 52, 55, 133, 151		Bhikṣu-sūtra	61
Benediction	141	Bhīm Sing	8
Bengal xiii, xv, xx, 102, 117, 121, 122, 124, 131, 134, 135, 141, 148		Bhoja Deva	68
Berar	68	Bhoraśilā	80
Berlin	3, 37	Bhoṭa	50
Bhadrabāhu	5, 6, 8	Bhrama-pramathana-yukti-hetu-siddhi	71
Bhadrabāhucarita	2	Bhrānta	81
Bhadra Pālita	80	Bhrānti	81
Bhadreśvara	50	Bhāmi	71
Bhagalpur	149, 150	Bibliotheca Indica xx, 9, 14, 23, 65, 70, 109, 113, 114, 124, 131, 140, 150	
Bhagavān	137	Bibliothek zu Berlin	37
Bhagavān Upavarṣa	33	Bimba	39
Bhagavati-sūtra	4	Bi(-wa)-hjug-paḥi-rtog-go	137
Bhāgyarāja	132, 135, 144	Bliss	21
Bhāmatī	23, 105	Blo(-dan)-se(-rab)	108, 131, 132, 135, 142, 143, 144
Bhāmatī-ṭīkā	23	Blunders	81
Bhaṁśa Candra	69	Bodhisattva	65, 82, 83, 99, 101, 124
Bhandarkar, Dr. R. G. 2, 5, 6, 14, 24, 25, 26, 37, 38, 41, 45, 47, 53, 63, 68		Bodhisattva-caryā-nirdeśa	72, 73
Bharapi	30	Bombay xiii, 6, 8, 13, 34, 46, 54, 95	



	Page		Page
Cāndrī-patrikā ..	xviii	Cho ₂ -can ..	90
Candrodaya ..	33	Cho ₂ -dañ-cho ₂ -can-gtan-la-dwab-	
Canon ..	3, 64	pa ..	136
Canonical ..	3, 63	Cho ₂ -grags ..	103
Canonical scriptures ..	3	Cho ₂ -kyi-brtson-bgrus ..	138
Canonised ..	58	Cho ₂ -qchog ..	131
Cap ..	78, 79	Cho ₂ -mi-qthun-dpe-ltar-nañ-	
Capital ..	49	wa ..	97
Carpenter, J. E. ..	60	Cho ₂ -mi-qthun-pa ..	90
Cārvāka ..	43, 46, 51	Cho ₂ -qthun ..	96
Caste ..	102, 103	Cho ₂ -qthun-dpe-ltar-nañ-wa ..	96
Casuist ..	62	Cho ₂ -qthun-pa ..	90
Casuistry ..	59, 60	Chowkhamba ..	50, 51, 52
Catalogue ..	36	Christian ..	145
Catalogue of the Chinese Tri-		Citrakūṭa ..	50
pitaka ..	66	Class ..	65, 109
Categories ..	8	Classification ..	59
Caturviṃśati-Jina-stuti ..	23	Coda ..	103
Caturviṃśati prabandha ..	6, 48, 51	Co-existent ..	129
Causation ..	62	Co-existent cause ..	129
Cause ..	11, 29, 30, 31, 111, 117,	Cogitation ..	40
	129, 138	Coḷa ..	71
Cemetery ..	104	Colgong ..	150
Cetiya ..	53	Collective ..	11
Ceylon ..	57, 58, 63, 122, 140	Commentary ..	xvii, xix, 66
Chala ..	51, 61	Comparison ..	4, 10, 74, 85, 88
Chalukya ..	xx, 81	Compendium ..	40, 82, 83
Chanda ..	140	Concentration ..	10
Chandonuśāsana-vṛtti ..	45	Conception ..	112
Chando-ratnākara ..	140	Concern ..	143
Chaplain ..	49	Conclusion ..	8, 16, 31, 32, 42,
Characteristics ..	40, 41, 91, 92, 93,		92, 94
	99, 100, 109, 110, 112, 134	Conditional ..	68
Characteristics of the middle		Confusion ..	109
term ..	91	Conjeeveram ..	80, 102
China ..	xiv, 63, 71, 73, 74, 75,	Connection ..	42, 55, 87, 92, 96,
	76, 89, 101		97, 111, 116, 118, 144
Chittore ..	50	Connection unshown ..	20, 116
Chola ..	103	Consciousness ..	40, 43, 59
Cho ₂ ..	90	Consequence ..	40
Cho ₂ -byuñ ..	148	Constituent ..	44



	Page	D	Page
Contained	29	Dabhoi	55
Container	29, 111	Daḍ-paḥi-ṣeṣ-rab	84
Contemplation	80	Daḍ-pa-ṣeṣ-rab	100
Contemplative	109	Dakṣiṇa	81
Contemplative system	71	Dāna Rakṣita	151
Continuity	118, 129	Dānaśīla	134, 135
Contradiction 94, 95, 113, 114		Dāna-śrīla	134
Contradictory	18, 94, 95, 112, 113	Darjeeling	xv, xv
Contradistinction	62	Dar-ma-grags	117
Contrariety	17	Darśanaśuddhi	46
Contrary separation	21	Daśabhūmīśvara	64
Controversialist	85	Daśāśruta-skandha-sūtra	6
Controversy	79	Daśavaikālika-niryukti	5, 6
Conventional	12	Daśavaikālika-niryukti-tīkā	48
Conviction	111	Daśavaikālika-sūtra	5
Conveyancing	62	Daśavaikālika-tīkā	46
Cordier, Dr. Palmyr	70	Daśavaikālika-vṛtti	3
Corea	63	Daśāvayava-vākya	6
Cosmic blindness	59	Das, Sarat Chandra	xv, 63, 72, 78, 82, 84, 119, 121, 124, 126, 129, 147, 148, 150, 151
Council 13, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 63, 64, 67		Death	57
Council of discussion	44	Debate	44, 62, 74, 104
Counter-argument	44	Debater	107
Counter-assertion	44	Debator	74
Counterpart	29	Deccan xiii, xix, 26, 68, 103, 107	
Counter proposition	7	Deccan College	28, 34
Cowell, Mr. E. B. 8, 26, 66, 67, 68		Declaration	111
Crawford, Mr.	xv	Defeat	61, 74
Credible	88, 89	Defect	21
Credible word	85, 88, 89	Defective	41
Cremation	104	Defective knowledge	4
Crest-gem of logicians	26	Definite	40
Csoma de Koros 105, 124, 135, 148		Definition	129
Cūḍāmaṇi	26, 103	Degree	1
Culla Vagga	57	De-kho-na-ñid-bḍuṣ-paḥi-ḍkaḥ-hgrol	130
Cunningham, General 145, 150		De-kho-na-ñid-bḍuṣ-paḥi-tshig-lehur-byas-pa	125
Cūrṇika	3	Delhi	63, 148
Cycle	57		



	Page		Page
Demonstration	89	Dharmakīrti xvii, xix, 24, 26, 27,	
Derivation	12	34, 41, 48, 49, 53, 82, 103,	
Deva .. 67, 70, 71, 72		104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109,	
Devacandra	44	113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118,	
Devadatta	29, 32	119, 120, 121, 124, 125, 129,	
Devāgamastotra	23	131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 138,	
Deva Pāla	148, 149	139, 140, 143	
Devardhi Gaṇi	13, 22	Dharmāloka	131
Devasundara	53	Dharmapāla 102, 103, 105, 124,	
Deva Sūri	38, 39, 50	130, 146, 148, 149, 150, 151	
Devendra Bhadra	130	Dharmapāla, A. H.	61
Devendrābodhi .. xvii, 118, 119		Dharmaputra	48
Devotee .. 103, 122, 123, 135,		Dharmasāgaragaṇi	5
136, 139		Dharmasaṃgraha	71
Dgaḥ-waḥi-rdo-rje	143	Dharmāśoka	99
Dge-baruṅ	130	Dharmavijaya, Muni xiv, 2, 6,	
Dge-seṅ-sin-gyaṅ	100	13, 22, 46, 49, 50, 52, 54	
Dge-waḥi-blo-gros .. 106, 117,		Dharmaviniscaya	140
118, 119		Dharmin	29, 90
Dgra-las-rgyal-wa	136	Dharmottara xix, 35, 46, 50, 53,	
Dhammaguttika	58	67, 131, 133	
Dhammasaṅgaṇi	59	Dharmottarācārya xx, 130, 131,	
Dhammuttariya	67	133	
Dhanapat Sing	3, 4, 6,	Dharmottaraṭippanaka 34, 131	
8, 11		Dialectic	106
Dhandhuka	44	Dialectician 72, 80, 100, 107,	
Dhaneśvara	37	123, 129	
Dhānyakāṭaka	xx	Dialectics	83
Dhāraṇā	41	Dialogue of Buddha	60
Dhāraṇī	103	Dīdhiti	xviii
Dharma	29, 80, 90,	Dīdhiti-sāra-maṅjarī	xviii
104, 141		Dīdhiti-ṭīkā	xviii
Dharmabhūṣaṇa	54, 82	Dīdhiti-tippaṇī	xviii
Dharmābhyudaya-mahākāv-		Dīdhiti-vyākhyā-vivecana xviii	
ya	47, 48	Digambara xviii, 1, 2, 5, 9, 22,	
Dharma-dharmi-viniścaya .. 136		25, 26, 28, 33, 36, 37, 38,	
Dharmagaṇja	147	54, 82, 105, 127	
Dharmaghoṣa	46	Dīgha Nikāya	59, 60
Dharma-guptya	65	Dignāga xvii, xix, 27, 34, 49,	
Dharmākara Datta	131	52, 53, 54, 70, 78, 79, 80,	
Dharmākara Sānti	151	81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87,	
		88, 89, 92, 95, 96, 99, 100,	



	Page		Page
Entrance to the Science of Logic	100	Fallacy of absence of connection	97
Equanimity	21	Fallacy of absence of disconnection	98
Era	63	Fallacy of argumentation	32
Era of tradition	1	Fallacy of "collective"	43
Erring one	81	Fallacy of example	19, 33, 98
Error	62	Fallacy of excluded middle and major terms	97
Ether	21, 74, 93	Fallacy of heterogeneous example	20, 21, 97
Etymological	12	Fallacy of homogeneous example	19, 96
Europe	xxi	Fallacy of included major term	98
Evam̐bhāta	4, 12, 21	Fallacy of included middle and major terms	98
Evam̐bhātābhāsa	43	Fallacy of included middle term	98
Evolution	129	Fallacy of inference	99
Examination	129	Fallacy of inverted negation	98
Example 7, 16, 17, 18, 31, 32, 42, 74, 76, 90, 95, 96, 97, 98, 114, 115, 116		Fallacy of middle term	18, 33, 93, 98, 112
Excluded	96	Fallacy of minor term	17, 32
Excluded major	96	Fallacy of naya	43
Excluded middle	96	Fallacy of perception	32, 99
Excluded middle and major terms	97	Fallacy of "practical"	43
Existence	20, 24, 25, 43, 68	Fallacy of reason	33
Experience	99, 109	Fallacy of reasoning	98
Extent	92	Fallacy of recognition	32
External	42	Fallacy of recollection	32
External inseparable connection	42	Fallacy of refutation	98, 116
Extreme	68	Fallacy of "subtle"	43
Extrinsic	18	Fallacy of "suchlike"	43
Eye	15, 59, 87, 95	Fallacy of straight expression	43
F		Fallacy of thesis	90, 98, 112
Fact	74	Fallacy of verbal testimony	33
Factitious	30, 31, 32	Familiar	95
Fahian	62, 67, 69, 145	Feeling	91
Fallacious	90, 96, 112	Fine Art	103, 121
Fallacy 21, 28, 32, 41, 42, 43, 70, 89, 93, 94, 96, 98, 99, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116			



GENERAL INDEX.

163

	Page		Page
First Council	58	Gokulika	58
Fitness	32	Go Pāla	124, 148, 149
Fleet, Dr. J. F. ..	57, 63	Gorakhpura	57
Form	110	Gorbara	3
Form of a syllogism ..	90	Go-sruṇ	151
Formula	6	Gosvāmi, Dāmodara Lal ..	51
Franklin	150	Gotama	2
Fraud	61	Gotamastotra	3
Futility	116	Gotra	5
G		Gough, Mr.	8, 26, 66, 67, 68
Gacchotpatti-prakīrṇaka ..	48	Govi Candra	119
Gadādhara	xviii	Govind	26
Gaṇadhara	2	Grags-hbyor- <i>se</i> -rab	130, 133
Gaṇadhara-sārdha-fataka ..	3	Grags-pa-rgyal-mtshan-dpal- bzañ	89
Gaṇḍavyūha	64	Grammar	103, 121, 122, 140, 141, 151
Gandha-hasti-mahābhūṣya ..	23	Great Britain	57, 58, 63, 64, 66, 72, 76
Gāndhāra	xix, 74, 75	Great Vehicle	63
Ganges	121, 122, 150	Glegs-bam-bklag-paḥi-thab ..	134
Gaṅgeśa Upādhyāya ..	xvii, xviii, 48	Gser-gyi-go-cha	84, 100
Garbhapāda	136	Gshan-gyi-don-gyi-rje-dpag ..	85
Gate-keeper	138, 139, 140, 151	Gshan-gyi-don-gyi-tshig ..	106
Gāthāsāhasrī	48	Gshan-gyi-don-rjes-su-dpag-pa ..	109
Gauḍa	137, 138, 151	Gshan-la-brtag-paḥi-tshig-lehur byas-pa	130
Gautama	xvii, 2, 3, 11, 57	Gshan-sel-wa	132
Gems	6, 14, 15	Gtan-tshigs	85, 90, 91
Genealogy	8	Gtan-tshigs-kyi-de-kho-na-ñid- bstan-pa	136
General	11, 17, 32, 86, 93, 94, 113, 115	Gtan-tshigs-kyi-lkhor-lo-gtan- la-dwab-pa	99
Generality	82, 95, 121, 128	Gtan-tshigs-kyi-thigs-pa	117
General knowledge	109	Gtan-tshigs-kyi-thigs-pa-rgya- cher-hgrel-wa	120
General property	11	Gtan-tshigs-ltar-maṇ	93
Generic property	11, 43	Gtan-tshigs-thigs-paḥi-hgrel- wa	133
Genus	85, 86, 99	Guge	125
Genyo	75	Guṇa	128
Germany	122		
Ghāṇaviśūṇa	59		
Ghaṭa	12		
Gloss	xix, 131		
Gnaṣ-maḥi-bu	128		
God	128, 131		



GENERAL INDEX.

165

	Page		Page
Historical Records ..	39	Inconsistent ..	95
Ujam dpal-rtsa-rgyud ..	69	Indescribable ..	25
Ujig-rten ..	129	India xiv, xv, xvi, xvii, xix, xx, 50,	
Ujig-rten-pha-rol-grub-pa ..	132	61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 67, 69,	
Hodgson, Mr. ..	xv, 64	71, 76, 78, 81, 96, 101, 102,	
Hoernle, Dr. ..	9, 23	103, 105, 108, 120, 122, 134,	
Holy saying ..	74	135, 145, 146	
Homogeneous 17, 19, 31, 32, 90,		Indian Logic ..	i, xvii
91, 94, 96, 110, 112, 113, 115		India Office xv, 84, 89, 100, 101,	
Homogeneous example 19, 97, 115		106, 107, 108, 109, 117, 118,	
Hornell, Mr. W. W. ..	xvi	120, 121, 123, 124, 125, 130,	
Hoshang ..	129	132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 138,	
Householder ..	7	139, 140, 141, 143, 144	
Humiliation ..	61	Indirect ..	112
Hun ..	xix, 14, 146	Indirect apprehension ..	28
Huṣkapura ..	xx	Indirect knowledge 4, 9, 10, 15,	
Hwen-thsang 14, 62, 66, 67, 68,		21, 29, 40, 41, 54	
71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 78, 82,		Individual knowledge ..	109
101, 102, 103, 105, 123, 145,		Indra ..	11, 43
146		Indrabhūti ..	2, 3
I		Indra Gomin ..	123
I ..	143	Indravijaya, Muni xiv, 2, 6, 13,	
Identification ..	41	22, 46, 49, 54	
Identity 31, 110, 111, 117, 134		Indriya ..	40, 129
Ignorance ..	21, 32	Indriya-parīkṣā ..	127
Ihā ..	41	Induction ..	96
Illumination ..	41	Inference 4, 5, 10, 15, 16, 19, 29,	
Illusion ..	59	30, 31, 40, 41, 42, 54, 74, 76,	
Illusory ..	43, 85, 99, 109	86, 87, 88, 89, 90, 99, 109,	
Image ..	11, 109	111, 112, 114, 129	
Immediate ..	43	Inference for one's self 16, 31, 41,	
Imperceptible ..	30, 31	85, 106, 108, 109, 110, 137, 139	
Implied ..	95, 113	Inference for others ..	41
Implied major term ..	113	Inference for the sake of	
Imposition ..	55	others 16, 17, 31, 85, 88, 109,	
Impressions ..	29	111, 112, 137, 139	
Included major term ..	98	Infinite knowledge ..	15
Included middle and major		Inquiring ..	41
terms ..	98	Inseparable ..	96
Included middle term ..	98	Inseparable connection 18, 20, 29,	
Incompatible ..	90, 91, 112	42, 92, 116	
		Instance ..	7



	Page		Page
Instrument	29	Jaina Logic	xiii, xvi, xix, 1
Intelligence	97	Jaina system	xviii
Intercourse	40	Jainendra	54
Internal	42	Jain Vaidya, Mr. ..	23, 25, 28, 33
Internal inseparable connec- tion	42, 76, 141	Jaipur	23, 25, 28, 33
Interpretation	43	Jalandhara	63, 148
Intrinsic	18	Jāmanagara	51
Introduction	xvii	Jambudvīpa	134
Intuition	41	Jambudvīpasamāsa ..	9
Invalid	19, 100	Japan	xiv, 63, 73, 74, 75, 76, 89, 101
Invariable accompaniment ..	18	Jarrett, Col.	40
Invariable separation	21	J. A. S. B.	xiii, 70, 71, 80, 122, 124, 125, 138, 140
Inverse connection	97	Jāti	51, 116
Inverse disconnection	98	Jaya Candra	69
Inversion	40	Jayadeva Miśra	xviii
Inverted	97, 98	Jayāditya	123
Inverted connection	20, 116	Jayanta	53
Inverted negation	98	Jayasimha	38, 39, 44, 46
Ireland 57, 58, 63, 64, 66, 72, 76		Jayasoma	5
Iṣṭavighātakṛt	113	J. B. B. R. A. S. ..	24, 26, 27, 28, 34, 63, 82, 105, 114
Īśvara-bhaṅga-kārikā	130	J. B. T. S.	63, 65, 66, 67, 68, 71, 73, 126, 129, 136, 150
Īśvara Kṛṣṇa	83, 95	Jesalmir	125
Īśvara Sena	106	Jetāri	136, 140, 151
Itaretarābhāva	42	Jetavanīya	65
Itihāsa	62	Jina	xviii, 1, 55, 80, 82, 137
I-tsing 63, 66, 84, 89, 99, 101, 102, 103, 105, 119, 123, 146		Jina Bhadra	137
J		Jinabhata	50
Jacobi, Dr. Herman	xiii, xiv, 1, 5, 13, 49	Jinadatta	32
Jagadīśa	xviii	Jinadattasūri	3
Jagat-svabhāva-vāda-parikṣā	127	Jina Mitra 120, 130, 134, 135, 146	
Jaimini	81	Jinaprabha	1, 3, 9, 51
Jaiminiya	33, 49, 51	Jina Sena	14, 24, 28, 34
Jaina	xiii, xviii, 2, 3, 10, 49, 59, 82, 104, 125	Jinendrabodhi	xvii, 124
Jaina darśana	8, 38	Jineśvara	37
Jaināgama List	46, 54	Jitāri	49
		Jīva	8, 22
		Jivhāvīṇśāṣa	59



GENERAL INDEX.

167

	Page		Page
Jñāna	4	Kanaka Muni	57
Jñānabindu-prakarāṇa ..	54	Kanaka Varma. <i>Vide Hema</i>	
Jñāna Candra	51, 52, 146	Varma	
Jñānagarbha	118, 120, 131	Kāñcī	xx, 80, 81
Jñāna-prasthāna-śāstra ..	66	Kāñcīpura	xx, 102
Jñāna-śrī	137, 138	Kangyur	72, 73
Jñāna-śrī Bhadra	117, 137, 138	Kaniṣka 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 78	
Jñāna-śrī Mitra	137, 138, 151	Kanva	68
J. P. T. S.	58, 68	Kapila	20, 21, 127, 128
J. R. A. S.	xix, 57, 58, 63, 64, 66, 72, 76, 103, 146	Kapilavastu	57
Jyotirvidābharaṇa	15	Kāraṇa	29, 30, 31
Jyotiṣkāvadāna	15	Kāraṇānupalabdhi	111
		Kāraṇaviruddhopalabdhi ..	111
		Karma	44, 128
K		Karṇa	151
Kabul	139	Karṇaripa	70
Kādambari	34	Karṇāṭa	xix
Kāla	129	Kārya 29, 30, 31, 110, 111, 117, 134	
Kalasa	12	Kāryahetu	117
Kālāsoka	58	Kārya-kāraṇa-bhāva-siddhi ..	138
Kālidāsa	81	Kāryānupalabdhi	110
Kalikāla Gautama	48	Kāryaviruddhopalabdhi ..	111
Kalikāla Sarvajña	44	Kāśikā-vṛtti	123
Kaliṅga	68, 104	Kāśmīra xx, 62, 67, 108, 123, 125, 130, 131, 132, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 142, 143, 146, 151	
Kālīśaṅkara	xviii	Kāśmīrian	89, 108
Kālīśaṅkarī-patrikā	xviii	Kassapiya	58
Kalpanā	109	Kāṣṭhāsaraṅgha	9
Kalpasūtra	1, 5, 6, 13	Kāśyapa	57, 58
Kalyāṇa-kāṇḍa	140	Kāśyapiya	65
Kalyāṇa-mandira-stava ..	14	Kathakoṣa	28
Kalyāṇa Rakṣita	130, 131	Kathāvatthuppakaraṇa ..	60, 61
Kamalakulīsa	151	Kathāvatthuppakaraṇa-aṭṭha-kathā	61
Kamala Rakṣita	151, 152	Kathīwar	13, 34, 51
Kamalaśīla 53, 126, 129, 146		Kātyāyanīputra	64, 66
Kamala-śīla-tarka	125	Kaubhīṣaṇin-gotra	9
Kamala-śrīla	129	Kauśāmbī	74, 75, 102
Kaṇabhakṣa	46	Kauśika	75
Kaṇāda	46, 104	Kavi	23, 25, 33, 47
Kaṇāda Gupta	104		
Kaṇāda Tarkavāgīśa	xviii		
Kāṇa Deva	71		



	Page		Page
Kāvya-mālā	3	Kṣānti Pāla	149
Kāvya-nuśāsanavṛtti	44	Kṣapanaka	15
Kāvya-prakāśa-saṅketa	47	Kṣatriya	121
Kāyaviññāṇa	59	Kubja	81
Kern, Prof.	63	Kukutasiddha	147
Kevala	10, 15	Kumārajīva	70, 71, 76
Kevalajñāna	2, 4	Kumārakalasa	136, 138, 141
Kevalin	2	Kumāralābha	67
Khamba	32	Kumāralabdha	67
Kharataragaccha 3, 5, 13, 14,	49, 53	Kumāra Nandī	54
Kharataragaccha-paṭṭāvalī	48	Kumāra Pāla	44
Khri-ral	xx, 135, 148	Kumārasrī	136
Khri-roṅ-deu-tsan	124, 129	Kumāra-śrī-bhadra	125
Khuddaka Nikāya	60	Kumārila 24, 26, 27, 28, 34, 81,	104, 105
Khyab	92	Kumārila Bhaṭṭa	81
Kielhorn, Prof. F.	123	Kumbha	12
King	62	Kumuda-candra	14
Kīrti	105	Kumuda-candrācārya	38
Klatt, Dr. J. 3, 5, 13, 14, 35, 38,	39, 45, 48, 49, 53	Kundakunda	9
Klog-skye-ṣeṣ-rab-brtsegs	140	Kurukullaka	65
Kloṅ-rdol-gaṇ-hbum	148, 151	Kuśinagara	57
Knowledge 4, 10, 22, 40, 59,	109, 112	Kuśinārā	57
Kolhāpura	54	Kusumapura	9
Koṅkana	137	Kutārka	81
Korunanda	103	Kwei-ke	76
Korur	14		
Koṣa-kāraka-śāstra	66		
Krakucchanda	57		
Kratu	43		
Kriahnā	68		
Kriyā-ratna-samuccaya	52, 53		
Kṛṣṇakānta	xviii		
Kṛṣṇarāja	26		
Kṛttikā	30, 31		
Kṣamāśramaṇa	13, 22		
Kṣāṇa-bhaṅga-siddhi 132, 133, 140			
Kṣāṇa-bhaṅga-siddhi-vyākhy-			
yā	133		



GENERAL INDEX.

169

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Laṅkāvatāra sūtra	71, 72, 73	125, 130, 133, 136, 139, 140, 141, 143	
Las	128		
Lassen, Mr.	63	Luna	112
Laukāyatika	33		
Laukika	16	M	
Law	62, 75, 80, 104	Mādhavācārya	8, 26, 38, 66, 67, 68, 82, 105, 107, 138
Leipzig	xiii	Madhu-sūdana Ṭhakkura	xviii
Leumann, Dr. E.	6	Madhyadeśa	103
Lévi, Sylvain	63	Madhyama	68
Lexicography	122, 140	Madhyamakāvātāra	140
Lha-bla-ma-shi-wa-hođ	125	Mādhyamika	51, 66, 67, 68, 70, 71, 122, 124
Lha-dwañ-blo	118	Mādhyamika-kārikā	70
Lha-lama-ye-feš-hođ	148	Mādhyamikā Vṛtti	68, 70
Lhan-ciğ-dmigs-pa-ñes-pa	136	Madhyānta-vibhāga-sāstra	73
Lhasa	142	Madras xx, 68, 78, 80, 81, 82, 102	
Lha-tsun-byañ-chub	148	Magadha 3, 20, 57, 61, 69, 97, 103, 124, 125, 136, 138, 139, 146, 147, 148, 151	
Library	147	Māgadhi	3, 57
Licchavi	123	Magic	62
Life	68	Ma-grub	93
Likeness	78	Mahābhadra-kalpa	57
Limitation	7	Mahādeva Paṇḍita	xviii
Liṅga	14, 16, 29, 90, 91	Mahākāla	14
Lion-cub	47	Mahākośala	68, 71
Literature	57, 59, 121, 122, 140	Mahāmati	72
Little Vehicle	63	Mahā Pāla	135, 136, 149
Locus	29	Maharaja	xv
Logic xiii, xiv, xv, xvii, xviii, xix, xx, xxi, 3, 4, 5, 6, 13, 14, 51, 52, 54, 57, 59, 60, 61, 64, 65, 67, 70, 71, 73, 74, 75, 77, 78, 89, 99, 101, 105, 107, 109, 117, 118, 119, 121, 123, 124, 125, 134, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 151		Mahārāja-Kanika-lekha	62
Logician	59, 72	Maharani	xv
Lohācārya	9	Mahārāstra	80, 81
Lokāyata	62	Mahāsamaya-sūtra	72, 73
Lokottaravādin	65	Mahāsārngghika	58, 65, 67
London xiv, xv, 58, 59, 60, 61, 69, 84, 89, 100, 101, 106, 107, 108, 109, 112, 117, 118, 120,		Mahāvagga	59
		Mahāvamsa	57, 58, 61, 66, 67
		Mahāvibhāṣā	64
		Mahāvihāra	65
		Mahāvīra 1, 2, 3, 6, 13, 14, 22,	



	Page		Page
Mahāvīracarita	2	Manual of Buddhism	57
Mahāvīracaritra	45	Manusamhitā	103
Mahāyāna 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 74, 75, 78, 80, 129, 138, 145		Māra	116
Mahāyāna-samparigraha-śāstra	74	Mark	29, 49, 90, 99
Mahendra Sūri	47	Masū Rakṣita	149
Maheśa Thakkura	xviii	Mathurānātha	xviii
Mahinda	58	Mati	4, 10
Mahī Pāla 134, 135, 148, 149		Maticitra	62
Mahīśāsaka	65, 74	Matter	126
Mahomedan	xx, 151	Max Müller	71, 75
Mahopādhyāya	5	Māyādevī	26
Maitreya xix, 57, 73, 74, 75, 78		Medieval	xvii
Major term 16, 18, 29, 30, 31, 41, 55, 76, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 110, 112, 113, 136		Medieval Logic	xiii, xviii, xix
Malla	34	Medieval school	i, xiii, xvii
Malladhāri	38, 51	Mediate	43
Mallavādin xix, 34, 35, 131		Medicine	62, 121
Mallinātha	81	Meditation	71, 104
Malliṣena	51	Meghadūta	81
Malwa	xviii, 14, 119	Members	44
Manah-paryāya	4, 10, 41	Menander	61
Manak	8	Mental	59
Manas	15, 40, 86, 87	Merutuṅga	1
Ma-ñeṣ-pa	93	Metaphysical Basket	58
Maṅgala	126	Metaphysics xviii, 13, 151	
Mañibhadra	52	Method of discussion	117
Māṇikya Candra	35, 36, 47	Metre	84
Māṇikya Nandi 26, 28, 33, 34, 37, 40, 54		Middle Age	xiv, xx
Mañjunātha	100	Middle Country	103
Mañjuśrī 80, 82, 83, 84, 123, 125, 136, 142		Middle Path	68
Mañjuśrī-mūla-tantra	69	Middle term 16, 17, 29, 30, 31, 33, 41, 55, 76, 77, 85, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 117, 136	
Manoratha	75, 143	Mi-ḍmigi-pa	110, 134
Manoviśuddhāna	59	Mi-ḍmigi-paḥi-gtan-tahige ..	117
Mantra	139	Mihirakula	xix, 146
Manu	103	Milinda	61, 62
		Milinda-pañha	61, 62
		Mīmāṃsaka 27, 32, 46, 54, 91, 93, 94, 105, 127	



GENERAL INDEX.

171

	Page		Page
Mīmāṃsā	60	Mutual non-existence	24, 25
Migd 10, 15, 40, 86, 87, 109		Myrobalan	80
Mine	143	Mythical	57
Minpr term 16, 17, 18, 29, 30, 33, 41, 76, 90, 91, 93, 95, 110, 112, 136		N	
Mirok	73	Nadia	xxi
Misconception	18	Nāgadatta	80
Mithilā	xxi	Nāga Rakṣita	137
Mitra, Dr. R. L. .. 36, 65, 149		Nāgaravācaka	8
Māon-sum 85, 99, 106, 108, 109, 129		Nāgārjuna 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 122, 145	
Māon-sum-ltar-nañ .. 99		Nāga Sena	61, 62
Modern	xvii	Nāgasena-Bhikṣu-sūtra .. 61	
Modern school	xviii	Nāga-Soṣa	122
Mody Keshablal	9	Nāgendra gaṇḍha 47, 48, 51	
Moggaliputta	60, 61	Ṣag-hbañ	141
Mokṣa	8, 21	Ṣag-taho-lotsava	148
Momentariness	132	Naigama	4, 11, 21
Momentary	17	Naigamābhāsa	43
Monastery xx, 89, 100, 118, 119, 124, 125, 151		Naiyāyika .. 46, 49, 54, 72	
Mongolia	63	Nālandā xx, 69, 71, 74, 79, 80, 81, 101, 102, 103, 119, 122, 123, 124, 129, 145, 146, 147, 150	
Morris, Dr.	59	Nālendra	121
Mtshan-ñid	129, 134	Nālo	69, 145
Mucak	74	Nāma	11
Mudita Bhadra	147	Nāmamālā	45
Mukhopadhyaya, Justice		Name	11, 85, 86, 99
Asutosh	iii	Nam-ṣkhaḥi-goṣ-can .. 127	
Muktākumbha	133	Nāṇambā	37
Muktāpīḍa	xx	Nanda	3
Mūla Sarvāstivāda	65	Nandī Sūtra	3, 4
Mumbha	32	Nañ-gi-khyab-pa	140
Muni Candra	38, 50	Nārāyaṇa Pāla	149
Muniratna	49	Narendra-ñrī-jñāna .. 151	
Munisundara	6, 39, 53	Ṣāri	148
Muñja	37	Naropa	151
Music	62, 104, 121	Nāsti	24
Muṣṭiharitakī	80	Nature	126, 127
Mu-tig-bum-pa	133	Nava Dharma	64, 72
Mutual	42		



	Page		ge
Naya 4, 8, 11, 15, 21, 22, 40, 43, 51, 54, 55		Non-self	22
Nayābhāsa	43	Nose	15, 87
Naya Pāla 141, 142, 148, 149		Notion	32
Negation .. 30, 98, 117		Novice	62
Negative .. 30, 31, 32, 92		Nyagrodhikā	9
Nemicandra 46, 47, 69, 70		Nyāsa	124
Neminātha	39	Nyāya .. 13, 40, 52, 61, 62, 127	
Nepal .. 57, 63, 71, 121, 141		Nyāya-bhāṣya xvii, 53, 86, 88	
Nibandhana	40	Nyāyabhūṣaṇa	53
Niebuhrstrasse	xiv	Nyāyabindu xix, 41, 53, 54, 109, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 120, 129, 131, 135	
Nigamana .. 8, 16, 31, 42		Nyāyabindupindārtha	135
Niggaha	61	Nyāya-bindu-pūrva-pakṣe- sāṃkṣipta	129
Niggaha-catukka	61	Nyāyabinduṭīkā xix, 34, 35, 113, 114, 120, 131	
Nighaṇṭuseṣa	45	Nyāya-dīpikā	54, 82
Nigliṣa	57	Nyāya-dvāra-śāstra	89
Nigraha	61	Nyāya-kalikā	53
Nigrahassthāna	51	Nyāya-kandalī	51
Nihkṣepa	55	Nyāya-khaṇḍa-khāḍya	54
Nila-netra	71	Nyāya-kumuda-candrodaya	33
Ṇi-ma-ṣbaṣ	123	Nyāya-kusumāñjali	53
Nirgrantha	104	Nyāyālaṅkāra	xvii, 53
Nirjarā	8	Nyāyālaṅkāra-vṛtti	53
Nirṇaya	39, 40	Nyāyālokaśiddhi	123
Nirṇayasāgara	6, 8	Nyāyāmṛta-taraṅgiṇī	54
Nirvāṇa 1, 2, 3, 8, 39, 57, 58, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 69, 73, 75, 82, 142, 145		Nyāyānusāra-śāstra	66
Nirvikalpaka	20	Nyāyapradīpa	54
Niryukti	6	Nyāya-praveśa 89, 90, 95, 102, 113, 114	
Nīti	61, 62	Nyāya-praveśaka	53
Noble truths	20	Nyāya-praveśaka-sūtra	48
Nomenclature	12	Nyāya-praveśa-tarka-śāstra 89, 102	
Non-conception	18	Nyāya-praveśa-nāma-pramā- ṇa-prakaraṇa	89, 102
Non-distinguished	11	Nyāya-rahasya	54
Non-entity	11	Nyāya-sāra	53
Non-erroneous	94, 114	Nyāya-śāstra	xvii
Non-erroneous contradiction 114		Nyāya-sūtra xvii, 11, 53, 66, 87, 88, 116	
Non-existence .. 10, 24, 25, 42			
Non-perception .. 110, 111, 134			
Non-reflective	20		



GENERAL INDEX.

173

	Page
Nyāya-vārtika	xvii, 53, 81, 85, 88, 89
Nyāyavārtika-tātparya-tīkā	xvii, 66, 81, 86, 88
Nyāya-vārtika-tātparya-tīkā-parisuddhi	.. .. xvii
Nyāyāvatāra	xix, 13, 15, 40, 46, 48, 76, 133
Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti	13, 19, 21, 46, 133
Nyāyāvatāra-vṛtti	48, 49
Nyāyāvayava	.. .. 85, 89
Nyāyaviniścaya	.. 26, 37, 40, 54
Nyāya-viniścaya-vṛtti	.. 37
Nyāya-vṛtti	.. .. xvii
Nyojits-ron	.. .. 77

O

Object	29, 95, 99, 109, 110, 129
Object of knowledge	.. 40
Object of sense	.. 40
Ocean of discussions	.. 36
Ocular	.. .. 59
Odantapura	.. 125, 140
Odantapurī	.. .. xx
Oldenberg, Dr.	.. 58, 59
Olfactory	.. .. 59
Omniscience	.. .. 141
Onesided	.. .. 43
Onesided knowledge	.. 40
Opponent	40, 44, 98, 104, 112, 116
Opposition	.. .. 113
Ordination	.. .. 14
Organs of sense	.. .. 10
Orissa	.. .. 80, 81
Orthodox	.. .. 65, 103
Others	.. .. 143
Oudh	.. .. xix

P

Padārtha 128
----------	-----------

	Page
Padmā	.. .. 122
Padmacarita	.. .. 35
Padma-sambhava	.. .. 129
Pag-sam-jon-zang	xv, 82, 84, 119, 121, 122, 123, 124, 129, 130, 131, 134, 135, 136, 137, 140, 142, 147, 148, 150
Pakṣa	16, 17, 18, 29, 33, 41, 42, 76, 90, 91, 112
Pakṣābhāsa	17, 32, 90, 112
Pakṣa-prayoga	.. .. 42
Pāla	xx, 136, 148, 149
Palhava	.. .. 63
Pāli	xiv, 3, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 63, 64, 67, 145
Palibothra	.. .. 150
Pali Buddhist Literature	.. 57
Pallava	.. xix, xx, 81
Pamiangchi	.. .. xv
Pañcasiddhāntikā	.. .. 44
Pan-chen-shwa	.. .. 78
Pāṇḍavapurāṇa	.. 23, 26
Paṇḍita	xx, 49, 62, 71, 78, 79, 80, 101, 108, 117, 123, 136, 138, 140, 141, 143, 144, 151
Paṇḍita's Cap	.. .. 79
Pāṇini	.. .. 102, 122, 124
Pañjikā	.. .. 38, 51
Paññatti	.. .. 58
Parahita	.. .. 143
Parahita Bhadra	.. 108, 132, 134
Paralogism	.. .. 8, 43
Pāralokasiddhi	.. .. xx, 132
Paramahansa	.. .. 48, 50
Paramārtha	xix, 76, 109, 146
Paramārthasat	.. .. 109
Pāramārthika	15, 40, 41, 43
Pāramārthika pratyakṣa	.. 21
Parārtha	.. .. 41
Parārthānumāna	16, 31, 85, 109, 111



	Page		Page
Parārtha-vākya ..	106	Pāvā ..	1
Pariccheda ..	24, 39	Pearl-oyster ..	40
Parīkṣā ..	129	Perceptible ..	30
Parīkṣāmukha ..	28, 37, 54	Perception 4, 10, 15, 16, 19, 29,	
Parīkṣāmukha-pañjikā ..	28, 37	40, 54, 85, 86, 88, 89, 90, 99,	
Parīkṣāmukha-śāstra ..	28	105, 106, 108, 109, 110, 111,	
Parīkṣāmukha-sūtra 26, 28, 29, 33,		112, 129, 137, 139	
	40	Perfect ..	41
Parīṣiṣṭaparvan ..	1, 45	Perfection ..	71, 146
Parivrājaka ..	103	Perfect knowledge ..	109
Parokṣa 4, 9, 10, 15, 28, 29, 40,		Permanence ..	128
	41, 54	Permanent ..	128
Pārīva ..	63	Personal Testimony ..	16
Pārīvanātha ..	1, 14, 125	Pervaded ..	29, 30, 31
Pārīvanātha-caritra 35, 36, 47		Pervader ..	29, 111
Pārtha Sārathi ..	81	Pervasion ..	29
Pārtha Sārathi Mīra ..	81	Peshwar ..	xix, 74, 75
Partially ..	92	Peterson, Professor xiii, xx, 2, 3,	
Particle ..	95	5, 9, 13, 14, 22, 23, 24, 26,	
Particular 11, 17, 32, 86, 115		28, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 44,	
Particularity ..	128	45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52,	
Particular property ..	11	54, 109, 113, 114, 131	
Parts of a syllogism 42, 85, 89		Petitia Principii ..	70
Party ..	93	Phakkikā-śāstra ..	xvii
Pāṭaliputra xviii, 9, 26, 28, 58		Phala ..	28, 128
Patan ..	35	Phalavardhigrāma ..	39
Patañjali ..	122	Phaṇi Candra ..	69
Pathak, K. B. 26, 28, 34, 105, 114		Phases ..	33
Pātharghāṭā ..	150	Philosophy ..	78
Paṭiccasamuppāda ..	59	Phodang ..	xv, xvi
Pātimokkha ..	78	Phyi-rol-gyi-don ..	129
Paṭiññā ..	61	Phyi-rol-gyi-don-grub-pa-ce-	
Patna ..	9	bya-waḥi-tahig-lehur ..	130
Pātra Kesari ..	28	Phyog ..	90
Pātra Kesari Svāmi ..	28	Phyog-glañ ..	80
Paṭṭa ..	38	Phyog-ltar-maṇ ..	90
Paṭṭadhara ..	5	Piety Mart ..	147
Pattāvalī 1, 3, 5, 6, 9, 13, 14, 49,		Piṅgala-netra ..	71
	53, 55	Pitaka ..	80, 103, 121
Pattāva l-vācanā ..	3	Pitakatraya ..	58
Paudgalika ..	17	Pitakattaya ..	58



GENERAL INDEX.

175

	Page		Page
Place	29	Pramāṇa 4, 8, 9, 10, 11,	
Poet	25, 123	15, 21, 22, 29, 40, 43, 51, 54,	
Poetry	62	55, 84, 106, 108, 129, 132, 134	
Pole	32	Pramāṇamīmāṃsā 26, 45	
Polémic	77	Pramāṇa-naya - tattvā - lokā-	
Polity	62	laṅkāra 38, 39, 41, 42, 50, 51	
Poona	28	Pramāṇa-nirṇaya	54
Positive	92	Pramāṇa-parīkṣā	27, 54, 132
Posterior	30, 31	Pramāṇa-samuccaya xvii, 80, 82,	
Pothi	125	83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 100,	
Poussin, Louis De La Vallee 70,		103	
106, 108		Pramāṇa-samuccaya-ṭīkā xvii, 124	
Prabandha-cintāmaṇi 14, 34		Pramāṇa-samuccaya-vṛtti xvii, 100	
Prabhācandra 23, 24, 28, 33, 34,		Pramāṇa-sāstra	xvii
48, 82		Pramāṇa-sāstra-praveśa	100
Prabhākara	27, 34	Pramāṇa-siddhi	106
Prābhākara	33, 54	Pramāṇa-sūtra-samuccaya	84
Prabhāmitra	146	Pramāṇa-svarūpa	28, 39
Prabhāvakaacaritra 14, 35, 38, 39,		Pramāṇa-vārtika	53, 106, 118,
45, 48		124, 135, 142	
Prācīna	5	Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā xvii, 103,	
Prācīna Gotra	5	105, 106, 107	
Practical	11, 15, 40	Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra xviii,	
Practical efficiency	110	135, 141	
Practice	71	Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra-ṭīkā	
Pradhāna	126	xviii, 137, 141	
Pradhvainsābhāva 24, 42		Pramāṇa-vārtika-pāñjikā xvii, 118,	
Pradyumna 14, 35, 38, 45		119	
Prāgabdhāva	24, 42	Pramāṇa-vārtika-pāñjikā-ṭīkā	
Praṣṭha Pāla	149	xvii, 119	
Prajñākara	27, 53	Pramāṇa-vārtika-ṭīkā xviii, 142	
Prajñākara Gupta xviii, 135, 141		Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti xvii, 107,	
Prajñākara Matī	135, 151	124	
Prajñāpāramitā-sūtra	147	Pramāṇa-viniścaya 107, 108, 132,	
Prajñaptivādin	65	138	
Prajñāvarma	120	Pramāṇa-viniścaya-ṭīkā 132, 138	
Prakarṇa	9, 45	Prameya-kamala-mārtaṇḍa 28, 33,	
Prakāśa	54	34, 54	
Prākṛta	3, 4, 14	Prameya-ratna-mālā 28, 37, 46	
		Prasamarati	9
		Pratibandhasiddhi	144



	Page		Page
Raṇ-bshin	110, 134	Records	13, 66
Raṇ-bshin-brtag-pa ..	127	References	57
Raṇ-bshin-gyi-gtan-tahigs ..	117	Reflective	20
Raṇ-don-gyi-rje-ḍpag ..	85	Refutation	21, 89, 98, 116, 131
Raṇ-don-gyi-rjes-su-ḍpag-pa ..	108	Relation	96
Raṇ-gi-don-rjes-su-ḍpag-pa ..	106	Relative extension ..	92
Raṇ-laṣ-tshaḍ-ma ..	129	Release	8
Rasa Pāla ..	149	Reliable authority ..	4, 10
Rāṣṭrakūṭa ..	26	Religion ..	xviii, 13, 78
Rathavīrapura ..	2	Remoteness ..	109
Ratnākara ..	151	Research Society ..	76, 133
Ratnakaraṇḍaka ..	23, 24	Resident ..	xvi
Ratnākara Sānti ..	140, 151	Respondent ..	44
Ratnakīrti ..	140	Restraint ..	8
Ratnaprabha ..	38, 46, 50, 131, 133	Result ..	43
Ratnarañjaka ..	147	Rgyal-ḍwañ-blo-gros ..	124
Ratnaraśmi ..	xx	Rgyal-wa-can ..	137
Ratnasūgara ..	147	Rgyu-dañ-hbras-buñi-ño-wo- grub-pa ..	138
Ratna-śekhara ..	52	Rgyuḍ-gshan-grub-pa ..	118
Ratnavajra ..	139, 151	Rgyuḍ-gshan-grub-paḥi-ḥgrel- bśaḍ ..	121
Ratnāvali ..	68	Rgyuḍ-pa ..	129
Ratnāvatārikā ..	51	Rhetoric ..	122, 140
Ratnāvatārikā-pañjikā ..	51	Rhys Davids, Dr. ..	57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 64, 66, 67, 103
Ratnāvatārikā-ṭippaṇa ..	51, 52	Right-hand ..	145
Ratnodadhi ..	147	Rigs-ldan-rgyal-po ..	100
Raudrī patrikā ..	xviii	Rigs-pa-can ..	127
Ravi Gupta ..	xvii, xx, 123, 124	Rigs-pa-grub-paḥi-sgron-ma ..	123
Rdo-rje-rgyal-wtshan ..	124	Rigs-paḥi-sbyor-wa ..	139
Rdsas ..	128	Rigs-paḥi-thigs-pa ..	109
Real ..	43, 109	Rigs-paḥi-thigs-paḥi-don- bśduṣ-pa ..	135
Reality ..	66	Rigs-paḥi-thigs-paḥi-phyogs- śna-ma-ḡdor-bśduṣ-pa ..	129
Reason ..	4, 7, 16, 30, 31, 33, 41, 74, 90, 91, 92, 94, 99, 100, 110, 111	Rigs-paḥi-thigs-paḥi-rgya- cher-ḥgrel-wa ..	131
Reasoning ..	10, 17, 59, 60, 73, 74, 75, 77, 90, 91, 94, 95, 98, 110, 112, 114, 116, 123, 139	Rigs-paḥi-thigs-pa ḡgya-cher- ḥgrel-wa ..	120
Recluse ..	60	Rigs-paḥi-yan-lag ..	85, 89
Recognition ..	29, 40, 41, 54		
Recognition of similarity ..	88		
Recollection ..	29, 40, 41, 54		



	Page		Page
Rin-chen-rdo-rje	139	Sabda-Brahma-parīkṣā ..	127
Rjeḥ-dpag-ltar-gnañ ..	99	Sabdānumāna	85
Rjeḥ-su-dpag	99	Sabdānusāsana	35
Rjeḥ-su-dpag-pa	129	Sabhāpati	44
Rjeḥ-su-hgro-wa-med ..	97	Sabhya	44
Rjeḥ-su-hgro-wa-phyin-ci-log-		Sacrifice	43, 147
pa	97	Ṣaḍdarśana	49
Rjusūtra	4, 11, 21	Ṣaḍdarśanasamuccaya ..	48, 49, 50, 52, 53
Rju-sūtrābhāsa	43	Ṣaḍdarśana-samuccaya-vṛtti ..	52, 53, 133
Rnam-par-rig-pa-tsam-ñid-du-		Saddharma-puṇḍarīka ..	64
grub-pa	140	Sādhana	29, 90
Rock	81	Sādhāraṇa	93
Rockhill, Mr.	66, 124	Sādharmya .. 17, 31, 90, 96	
Rohiṇī	30, 31	Sādharmya-dṛṣṭāntābhāsa ..	19, 96
Ronki	76	Sādharmyavat	112
Ronshiki	76	Sādhya	7
Ronshin	76	Sādhya .. 16, 18, 19, 29, 76, 90	
Rṣabhadeva	1	Sādhya	70
Rṣibhāṣita-sūtra	6	Ṣaḍ-lakṣaṇa	134
Rṣimaṇḍala-prakarana-vṛtti ..	6	Sadvāha	68
Rtags	99	Sāgaracandra	47
Rtog-gehi-kañ	138	Sāgarendu	47
Rtsoḍ-paḥi-khyu-mchog ..	80	Sahacara	30, 31
Rtsoḍ-paḥi-rigs-pa	117	Sahāvalambha-niścaya ..	136
Rtsoḍ-paḥi-rigs-paḥi-hbrel-pa		Saint	80, 83, 109
-don-gnam-par-hbyeḍ-pa ..	125	Saka .. 1, 14, 26, 28, 34, 51, 63, 131	
Rtsoḍ-paḥi-rigs-paḥi-hgrel-wa	120	Sakābda	63
Rucidatta	xviii	Sākḥā	8
Rudra	14	Sakala	41
Rudra Nārāyaṇa	xviii	Sākala	75, 146
Rudra Nyāyavācaspati ..	xviii	Sakra	12, 43
Rugged hand	81	Sakrāditya	145, 146
Rules of debate	44	Sakti	12
Russia	131	Sākya	89, 125
		Sākyaabodhi	xvii, 119
S		Sākya-hoḍ .. 136, 138, 140, 141	
Sabalā	32	Sākya Muni	57, 116
Sabarasaśvāmi	27, 34	Sākya-simha	121
Sabbatthi	58, 66	Sākya-śrī Pandita ..	151
Sabda	4, 12, 15, 16, 21		
Sabdābhāsa	43		



GENERAL INDEX.

179

	Page		Page
Sāla Candra	69	Samvat 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 44, 45,	
Sālikā Nūtha	54	46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53,	
Salvation 8, 21, 38, 39,		55, 131	
83		Samvṛti	43
amabhirūḍha .. 4, 12, 21		Sāmvyavahārika	40
Samabhirūḍhābhāsa	43	Samyaktvaparakaraṇa	46
Sambhūtivijaya	5	Samyaktvaparakāśa	28
Samādhirāja	64	Sam-yo	124, 125
Samāja-guhya	147	Sanātana	136
Samāna	13	Sanḡha	103
Samantabhadra .. 22, 23, 24, 25,		Sanḡhabhadra	66, 76
27, 54		Sanḡhārāma	67, 74, 145
Samantapāsādikā	76	Sanḡkantika	58
Sāmānya 17, 32, 54, 82, 95, 109,		Sanḡkara	23
128		Sanḡkarācārya	xx, 23
Sāmānya-dūṣaṇa-dik-prakāśikā 121		Sanḡkarānanda	xviii, 142
Sāmānya-lakṣaṇa	109	Sanḡkara Svāmin 89, 101, 102	
Samaraiccakahā	49	Sanskrit	3, 15
Samāropa	40	Sanskrit Buddhist Literature	
Samatāta	102	63, 64	
Samavāya	129	Sāntakara Gupta	101
Samavāyābhāva	24	Santānāntara-siddhi 117, 121	
Samayabhedoparacana-cakra 119		Santānāntara-siddhi-ṭīkā	121
Sambandha	128	Sānta Rakṣita 79, 124, 125, 126,	
Sambandha-parīkṣā 118, 120, 143		129, 130, 148	
Sambandha-parīkṣānusāra	142	Santati	129
Sambandha-parīkṣā-ṭīkā	120	Sānti Bhadra	136, 140
Sambandha-parīkṣā-vṛtti	118	Sāntinātha	xx, 22, 109, 131
Sambhava	10	Sāntipa	140
Samgraha	4, 11, 21	Sānti-ṣena	37
Samgrahābhāsa	43	Sānti Sūri	37
Sāṅkhyā xix, 27, 33, 46, 49, 51,		Sāntyācārya	37
62, 65, 91, 95, 125		Saptabhaṅgi	51
Sāṅkhyā-kārikā	83, 95	Saptabhaṅgi-naya 8, 24, 43, 51	
Sammati-tarka-sūtra 14, 36		Sapta-bhaṅgi-taraṅgiṇī	8
Sammitiya	65, 66	Saptadaśa-bhūmi-śāstra-yogā-	
Sāmprata	12	cārya	72, 73
Samsāra	129	Saraha	68
Samsāya	40	Sarasvatī	iii, 103
Sāmu Pāla	149	Sarasvatīgaccha	6, 9
Samvara	8	Sāriputra	145



	Page		Page
Sarvadāriana-saṅgraha	8, 26, 38, 66, 67, 68, 82, 105, 107, 138	Science	13, 59, 62, 139
Sarvajña Deva	134, 135	Schlagintweit, Dr.	71, 73
Sarvajña Mitra	124	Scripture	4, 15, 16, 29, 32, 40, 41, 58, 114, 121, 129
Sarvājña-siddhi-kārikā	141	Scriptural method	22
Sarvajña-śrī Rakṣita	89	Scriptural testimony	16
Sarvarājagani	3	Sculptor	145
Sarvāstivāda	65, 66, 75, 140	Scythian	62
Saśi	112	Second Council	58
Sākya	89, 100	Sect	2, 58, 65, 66, 67, 74, 75
Sāstra	82, 83, 84, 89, 100, 103, 106, 139	Seish	75
Sāstraja	16	Self	22, 143
Sāstra on the grouped inferences	84	Self-conscious	22
Sāstri, Gaṅgādhara	81	Self-consciousness	109
Sāstri, Hara Prasad	140, 141, 150	Self-evidence	128, 129
Sat	109	Sel-wa-grab-pa	143
Sataka-sāstra	71	Semblance	17, 28, 116
Sata-sāstra-vaipulya-vyākhyā	102	Semblance of reason	18
Sātavāha	68	Semblance of refutation	21, 116
Sātavāhana	68	Señ-dkar	136
Satru	12	Sensation	111
Satruñjaya	34	Sense	10, 29, 85, 95, 99, 109, 129
Sauddhodani	46, 53	Sense-organ	40, 86, 87, 127
Saugata	17, 27, 33, 46, 54	Sense-perception	10
Sautrāntika	65, 66, 67	Separation	49
Sāvaka	60	Separation unshown	21
Savant	xvi	Sermon Basket	58
Savikalpaka	20	Ser-kyā-pa	127
Sba	130	Serviceable	95
S. B. E. series	58, 59, 61, 62	Seṣa	122
Schiefner, A.	xv, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72, 74, 80, 81, 82, 103, 106, 118, 119, 121, 123, 130, 131, 134, 135, 136, 137, 139, 140, 141, 142, 145, 148, 150, 152	Seṣ-paḥi-dge-gna	84
Scholar	62	Seṣ-rab	125
School	xvii, xviii, 66, 104, 140	Seṣ-rab-hbyun-gnaṣ-ba	135
School of thought	62	Seṣ-rab-don-bu	69
		Sewell, Mr.	xx, 68, 81
		Sgra	129
		Sgrahi-tahanṣ-pa-bṛtag-pa	127
		Sgra-rje-dpag	85
		Shalu	78
		Sha - ma - kun - laṣ-btuṣ-paḥi-hgrel-wa	100



GENERAL INDEX.

181

	Page		Page
Shan-shun	137	Simśapā ..	5, 31, 110, 111
Shawl	79	Simultaneity	29
Sherbatski, F. J. ..	109, 114, 131	Simultaneous	30, 31
Shi-wa-htsho	124	Sitaprabha	123
Shu-chen 120, 121, 130, 131, 135,	140	Si-wahī-dge-gua	100
Sh'-yen-tōh-cia	68	Skad-cig-ma-hjig-pa-grub-pa ..	132
Siam	63	Skad-cig-ma-hjig-grub - pañi -	nam-hgrel 133
Siamese edition	61	Skyes-bu	127
Siddha	35	Skyes-bu-hrtag-pa	127
Side	44	Sky-lotus	18
Siddha-Hema-sabdānusāsana-		Sloka-vārtika	27, 54
brhat-ṭikā	35	Sloka-vārtika-bhāṣya	54
Siddhajayantī-caritra-ṭikā ..	2	Smarana	40, 41
Siddhānta	3	Smaranābhāsa	32
Siddharāja	47	Smith, Vincent A. ..	58, 61, 63
Siddharṣi	46, 49	Smṛti	29, 54
Siddhasena	15, 22, 37	Sñes-ṭhañ	142
Siddhasena Divākara xix, 13, 14,	15, 22, 40, 46, 76	Sophism	60
Siddhasena-divākara-vyāk-		Sophist	59, 60, 62
hyānaka	46	Sophistry	60
Siddhasena Gaṇi	9, 22	Sorrow	49, 50
Siddhatthika	58	Sotaviññāna	59
Siddha-vyākhyānaka	46	Soul 8, 10, 15, 22, 41, 43, 44, 60,	72, 91, 95, 112, 127, 128, 129
Sign	16, 29	Soul-less	8
Sikkim xv, xvi, 89, 99, 118, 119,	125, 130, 135, 138, 142	Sound	127, 129
Sīla	123	Source of knowledge 106, 108, 112	
Sīlabhadra 101, 102, 103, 146		Specific property	11, 43
Sīlāditya	34	Spell	62
Silao	150	Spyi	128
Sīlasaṅgama	150	Srāddha-pratikramaṇa-sūtra-	vṛtti
Silver	40	Sragdharā-stotra 70, 121, 124, 150	
Simha	123, 124	Sragdharā-stotra-ṭikā	150
Simhagiri	22	Sramaṇa	60
Simhasūri	22	Srāvaka	137
Simhaśiṣuka	47	Sreṣṭha Pāla	149
Simhavaktra	80	Srī	106, 136, 140
Simha-vyāghrī-lakṣaṇa	48	Srī Dhānyakāṭaka	xx
Similar	88	Srīdhara	51



	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Srī Harṣa ..	xx, 123	Succession ..	29, 118
Srī Harṣa Deva ..	xx, 132	Such-like ..	12
Srī-jñāna ..	138, 148, 151	Sudhākara Dvivedi ..	14
Srīkaṇṭha ..	xvii, 53	Sudharma Svāmi ..	2
Srīlabdha ..	67	Sudurjaya ..	80
Srīparvata ..	68	Sugata ..	54, 131
Srī-śaila ..	68	Suggestiveness ..	32
Sroṇ-tsan-gam-po ..	104, 105	Sugiura, Dr. xiv, 73, 74, 75, 76,	89, 101
Srughna ..	71	Suhllekha ..	68
Sruta ..	4, 10, 22	Suitable ..	12
Srutakevalin ..	5	Sukhabodhikā ṭikā ..	13
Sruti ..	129, 130	Sukṛtasamkīrtana ..	48
Sruti-parīkṣā ..	130	Sultanganj ..	150
Statement ..	91, 112	Sumati ..	135, 141
Stein, Dr. ..	xx	Sumati-kīrti ..	131
Steinthal, Paul ..	60	Sum-pa ..	137
Sthānāṅga-sūtra ..	4, 8, 11	Sum-paḥi-choḥ-byuṅ ..	63
Sthāpanā ..	11	Suṅ ..	64
Sthavira ..	65, 67, 151	Sunāyakaśrī ..	151
Sthira ..	128	Sunaya-śrī Mitra ..	136
Sthira-dūṣaṇa ..	140	Sung-yun ..	67, 69
Sthīramati ..	121, 146	Sun-hbyin ..	98
Sthūlabhadra ..	3	Sun-hbyin-ltar-snañ-wa ..	99
Sthūlahasta ..	81	Superimposition ..	40
Stimuli ..	95	Superior ..	151
Ṣton-gshon ..	100	Surendrabodhi ..	135
St. Petersburg ..	114	Sureśvara ..	105
Straight expression ..	11	Sureśvarācārya ..	105
Study ..	10	Sūri ..	39, 45, 53, 55
Stūpa ..	xx, 68	Surname ..	46, 48
Suali, Dr. ..	49, 52, 133	Sūrya-prajñapti-sūtra ..	6
Subhakara Gupta ..	151	Sūtra 8, 10, 45, 103, 121, 139, 140	
Subhatuṅga ..	26	Sūtra-kṛtāṅga-niryukti ..	8
Subhūti-śānta ..	140	Sūtra-kṛtāṅga-sūtra ..	6
Subhūti-śrī ..	118	Sūtrālaṅkāraṭīkā ..	73
Subhūti-śrī-śānti ..	106	Sūtrānta ..	67
Subject ..	29, 90, 91	Sūtra upadeśa ..	63
Subsequent ..	42	Sutta ..	58
Subsequent non-existence ..	24, 25	Suttanta ..	67
Substance ..	43, 93, 95, 128	Sutta piṭaka ..	58, 59, 60, 63
Subtle ..	12		



GENERAL INDEX.

183

	Page	T	Page
Suvarṇa-prabhāsa ..	64	Tactual ..	59
Suvarṇa ..	145	Takakusu xix, 63, 64, 66, 76, 84,	
Svabhāva 31, 110, 111, 117, 134		89, 99, 101, 102, 103, 105,	
Svabhāva-hetu ..	117	119, 123, 146	
Svabhāvānupalabdhi ..	110	Takka ..	60
Svabhāva-parīkṣā ..	127	Takki ..	59, 60
Svabhāvaviruddhopalabdhi ..	111	Takkika ..	59, 60
Svalakṣaṇa ..	109	Takṣaśilā ..	67
Svārtha ..	41	Tāmraśāṭīya ..	65
Svārthānumāna 16, 31, 85, 106,		Tangyur xx, 62, 70, 72, 78, 84, 85,	
108, 109, 110		89, 99, 100, 101, 106, 107,	
Svarūpa ..	40	108, 109, 117, 118, 119, 120,	
Svarūpasambodhana ..	26	121, 123, 124, 125, 129, 130,	
Svataḥ-prāmāṇya ..	129	131, 132, 134, 135, 136, 137,	
Svatantra ..	124	138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143,	
Svatantra Mādhyamika school	124	144, 150	
Svāti ..	9	Tantra 70, 124, 129, 140, 146, 147	
Svāti-tanaya ..	9	Tāntrio ..	124
Svayambhūstotra ..	23	Tapāgaccha ..	1, 3, 52, 55
Svetāmbara xviii, 1, 2, 5, 6, 9, 14,		Tapāgacchapaṭṭāvalī ..	48
22, 34, 35, 36, 38, 48, 50, 51,		Tārā ..	121, 122
52, 54		Tārānātha, Lama xv, 66, 67, 68,	
Syādasti ..	24	69, 70, 71, 72, 74, 80, 81, 82,	
Syād-nāsti ..	24	103, 106, 118, 119, 121, 123,	
Syādvāda ..	8, 22, 23, 24	130, 131, 134, 135, 136, 137,	
Syādvāda-kalikā ..	51	139, 140, 141, 142, 145, 148,	
Syādvāda-mañjarī ..	51	150, 151, 152	
Syādvāda-ratnāvatārikā 38, 50,		Tarka ..	29, 40, 41, 54
131, 133		Tarkabhāṣā 53, 54, 55, 138, 139	
Syādvādaratnāvatārikā-pañ-		Tarkābhāsa ..	32
jikā ..	38	Tarka-nyāya ..	117, 129
Syādvāda-śruta ..	22	Tarka-puṅgava ..	80, 81
Syādvāda-vidyāpati ..	54	Tarka-rahasya-dīpikā ..	52
Syāt ..	8	Tarkasaṅgraha ..	126, 128
Syllogism 6, 7, 16, 29, 42, 77, 85,		Tarka-śāstra ..	xvii, 76, 77
89, 92, 114, 136		Tarka-ṭīkā ..	133
Syllogistic ..	76	Tarkī ..	60
Synonyms ..	12	Tārkika ..	26, 59, 72, 73
System ..	xiii, 49	Tārkika-cakra-cūḍāmaṇi ..	26
Systematic ..	13	Tarkin ..	59
Systems of philosophy ..	33	Tashilhunpo ..	78



	Page
Tathāgata	57
Tāthāgata	27, 54
Tathāgata-guhyaka	64
Tathāgata Gupta	145
Tātparyā-parisuddhi	53
Tātparyāṭīkā	53
Tattva	125
Tattva-śloka	xviii
Tattvacintāmaṇi .. xvii, xviii, 48	
Tattvacintāmaṇiprakāśa .. xviii	
Tattvārtha-bhāṣya	54
Tattvārthādhigama sūtra xiii, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 22, 23	
Tattvārtha-bodha-vidhāyini ..	36
Tattvārtha-śloka-vārtika	54
Tattvārtha sūtra	54
Tattvārtha-ṭīkā	22
Tattva-samāsa	125
Tattva-saṁgraha 53, 125, 126, 128, 130	
Tattva-saṁgraha-kārikā	125
Tattva-saṁgraha-pañjikā	130
Tattva-ṭīkā	xviii
Tawney, Mr.	14
Taxila	67
Technicality	70, 138, 139
Telingāna	78, 82
Tepiṭaka	58, 59, 63
Terai	57
Testimony 4, 10, 15, 32, 40, 41, 43, 85, 88, 89, 130	
Text	xvii, xix
Thamṣ-e-aḍ-ṣkhyen-pa-grub- paḥi-tshig-lehur-byas-pa ..	141
Thān	64
Tha-sam-tsan	100
Theory of example	114
Thera	58, 65, 67
Theravāda	58
Thesis xiii, xv, xvi, 74, 76, 90, 91, 94, 98, 112	

	Page
Thibaut, Dr. G.	xvi, 14
Third Council	58
Thi-srong-deu-tsan	148
Tholing	148
Thomas, Mr. F. W.	xv, 84
Thoṣ-pa	129
Thoṣ-pa-brtag-paḥi-tshig-lehur- byas-pa	130
Three Baskets	58
Three-formed	111
Thunderbolt	80
Thun-moñ	93
Thun-moñ-ma-yin	94
Tibet xv, xx, 50, 63, 69, 71, 78, 79, 89, 100, 120, 122, 124, 125, 129, 131, 134, 135, 137, 139, 140, 148, 151	
Tibetan Dictionary	78
Tibet Mission	xv
Tiger-cub	47
Ṭīkā	28
Tilakācārya	46
Tilopa	134
Time	101, 129
Tiñ-ñe-ḥdsin-bzañ-po	140
Tippanaka	35
Tīrtha	80, 83, 103, 104, 152
Tīrthakalpa	1, 9
Tīrthanāṅkara	1
Tīrthika	71, 116, 121, 139, 147
Tiryak	32
Tissa	60, 61
Tongue	15, 87
Total unreality	68
Touch	15, 87
Tower	145
Tradition	1, 54, 58, 62
Traditional	13
Trairūpya	91
Transcendental	15, 40, 41
Transcendental perception	24
Treatise	9



GENERAL INDEX.

185

	Page
Trikāla-parīkṣā	101
Trilokasāra	1
Triṃhaya	103
Tripitaka .. 58, 61, 64, 80	
Tri-rūpa-hetu	85
Triṣaṣṭiśalākāpuruṣa-caritra	45
Truth	44
Tsandrahi-khron-pa ..	123
Tshab-ñi-ma-grags ..	132
Tshad-ma	129
Tshad-ma-brtag-pa ..	132
Tshad-ma-grub-pa ..	106
Tshad-maḥi-bstan-bcos-rig-pa- la-bjug-pa	100
Tshad-maḥi-mdo-kun-la-btu- pa	84
Tshad-ma kun-la-btu-pa ..	84
Tshad-ma-rig-par-bjug-paḥi- sgo	89
Tshad-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-ḍkaḥ- hgrel	118
Tshad-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-hgrel- bśad	119, 142
Tshad-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-hgrel- pa	124
Tshad-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-hgrel- wa	107
Tshad-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi- rgyan	135
Tshad-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-rgyan -gyi-hgrel-bśad	137
Tshad-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-tshig	106
Tshad-ma-rnam-hgrel-rgyan- gyi-hgrel-bśad	141
Tshad-ma-rnam-ñe-kyi-ṭikā	132
Tshad-ma-rnam-par-ñe-pa ..	108
Tshad-ma-rnam-par-ñe-paḥi- hgrel-bśad	138
Tshig-gi-don	128
Tsin	61, 64
Tshul-gsum	91
Tshul-hkhrim-rgyal-mtshan	101

	Page
Turuṣka	62, 147, 151, 152
Tutelary	121
Type	5, 16, 40

U

Udāharana	31
Udāna	60
Udayana	53, 54
Udayanācārya	xvii, 49
Udayaprabha	47, 48, 51
Udyāna	139
Udyotakara xvii, 27, 34, 53, 81, 85, 88, 89, 105	
Uha	29
Ujjainī	xviii, 14, 15
Umā	9
Umāsvāmin	9
Umāsvāti xiii, 4, 8, 9, 10, 12, 22, 23	
Uncertain 19, 93, 94, 100, 112, 113	
Uncertainty	40
Unconnected	19, 116
Unfamiliar	91
Universal	95, 96, 97
Universal connection	55, 92, 96
Universal proposition	95, 97
University i, xvi, xx, xxi, 79, 101, 102, 103, 135, 138, 139, 140, 141, 145, 146, 147, 150, 151	
University studies	1
Unproved	18, 93, 112
Unravelling	62
Unseparated	21
Upadeśamālā-ṭikā	38
Upadeśamālā-viśeṣa-vṛtti ..	46
Upadeśamālā-vṛtti	50
Upalabdhī	30
Upamāna	4, 10, 74, 85
Upanaya	16, 31, 42, 61
Upanaya-catukka	61
Upāṅgas	3



	Page		Page
Upaniṣad ..	127, 128	Vairocana ..	123
U-pa-ni-ṣa-di-kaḥ ..	128	Vaiśālī ..	58, 71
Upāsaka 103, 122, 123, 139		Vaiśeṣika 27, 46, 49, 62, 65, 82, 91	
Upāsakādhyayana ..	23, 24		94, 127
Upavarṣa ..	33	Vaiṣṇava ..	xx
Urddhvata ..	32	Vajirīya ..	58
Utpādasiddhi-prakaraṇa ..	45	Vajra ..	80, 145
Utsarpiṇī ..	1	Vajracchedikā ..	75
Uttara ..	30, 31	Vajrasākhā ..	44
Uttaradharma ..	67	Vajrāsana ..	139, 141
Uttarādhyayana-bṛhad-vṛtti ..	37	Vajravarāhī ..	139
Uttarādhyayana-sūtra ..	6	Vāk-praja or Vāgbhaṭa ..	141
Uttaravāhinī ..	150	Vākyapadīya ..	27
Uvāsagadasāo ..	23	Valabhi ..	xviii, 13
		Valid ..	94, 100
V		Validity ..	74
Vācakācūrya ..	8	Valid knowledge 4, 10, 15, 16, 19,	
Vācaka-śramaṇa ..	8	21, 28, 29, 32, 40, 43, 54, 55,	
Vācaspati ..	53, 105	84, 99, 109, 110, 129, 132	
Vācaspati Mīra xvii, 23, 49, 66,			
81, 86, 88, 105			
Vāda ..	8, 44	Vana Pāla ..	131, 149
Vāda-mahārṇava ..	36, 37	Vande-dpal-bṛtseg ..	121
Vāda-nyāya ..	117, 120, 125	Vande-nam-gkhaḥ ..	118, 120
Vāda-nyāya-vṛtti-vipaṇcitār-		Vande-ye-ṣe-ṣe ..	120, 135
tha ..	125	Varāhamihira ..	6, 14
Vāda-nyāya-vyākhyā ..	120	Vararuci ..	122
Vādi ..	40, 44	Vardhamāna ..	1, 54
Vādin ..	34	Vardhamāna-sūri ..	3
Vādipravara ..	38	Vārendra 121, 122, 123, 124, 136,	
Vāgbhaṭa : vide Vākpraja.		148, 151	
Vāgīśvarakīrti ..	137, 141, 151	Vasubandhu xix, 74, 75, 76, 78,	
Vāhyārtha ..	129	80, 81, 146	
Vāhyārtha-siddhi-kārikā ..	130	Vasubhūti ..	2
Vaibhāṣika 65, 66, 67, 74, 75, 78,		Vasudhara ..	141
130		Vasudhara Rakṣita ..	100
Vaidharṇya ..	17, 20, 31, 90	Vasu Mitra ..	63
Vaidharṇya-dṛṣṭāntābhāsa 20, 21,		Vatsagotra ..	9
97		Vātsīputra ..	66, 128
Vaidharṇyavat ..	112	Vātsīputrīya ..	65, 66, 80
Vaidūryakarpo ..	148	Vātsī-sūta ..	9
Vairasvāmi ..	47	Vātsyāyana xvii, 53, 86, 87	
		Vatṭagāmaṇi ..	58



GENERAL INDEX.

187

	Page		Page
Veda	62, 103	Vikala	41
Vedāṅga	103	Vikrama	1, 2, 35, 63, 131
Vedānta	51	Vikramāditya	xix, xx, 6, 14, 15, 22, 81, 146
Vedāntasūtra	23, 105	Vikramañīpura	117
Vedāntin	82	Vikrama saṁvat	49
Veṅgi	81, 82	Vikramaśilā	xx, xxi, 79, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 146, 148, 150, 151
Veṅkapaṭṭa	36	Vimala Candra	119, 140
Verbal	12, 42	Vimala Dāsa	8
Verbal fallacy	43	Vīmaṁsā	60
Verbal testimony 4, 10, 15, 32, 40, 41, 85, 88, 89, 130		Vīmaṁsi	60
Vibhāṣā	66	Vinaya	146
Vibhāṣā-sāstra	67	Vinayāditya	xx
Vibhāṣā-vinaya	76	Vināyaka	133
Vicārāmṛta-saṁgraha	48	Vinaya Piṭaka	57, 58, 59, 63, 78
Vicāra-ratna-saṁgraha	5	Vinaya Vibhāṣā	63
Vicāra-sūtra-prakaraṇa	1, 14, 48	Vinaya Vijaya Gaṇi	13
Vicārasreṇī	1	Vindhya	103, 104, 148
Vicitrādvaitasiddhi	140	Vinīta Deva	119, 121, 140
Victory	44	Viññāṇa	59
Vidarbha	68	Vipakṣa	7
Vidhi	30	Vipakṣa-pratiśedha	7
Vidyabhusana, Satis Chandra		Viparītānvaya	20, 21, 97, 116
i, xvi, xxi, 63, 66, 67, 68, 70, 71, 72, 76, 80, 121, 122, 124, 133, 138, 140, 150		Viparyaya	40
Vidyādhara	121	Vīra	13, 35
Vidyānātra-siddhi-sāstra-vyākhyā	102	Viraha	49, 50
Vidyānanda 23, 26, 27, 28, 34, 37, 82, 105		Viruddha	18, 94, 111, 113
Vienna	35	Viruddhakāryopalabdhi	111
Vienna Oriental Journal	35	Viruddhāvyabhicāri	114
Vigraha Pāla	149	Viruddhavayāptopalabdhi	111
Vigraha-vyavartanī-kārikā	70	Viśālāmalavatī	xvii, 124
Vigrahavyavartanī vṛtti	70	Viśālāmalavatī-nāma-pramāṇa-samuccaya-tīkā	xvii, 124
Vihāra*	xx, 104, 125	Viśaya	28, 40
Vijaya	37	Viśeṣa	17, 32, 128
Vijayasena	47, 50	Viśṇuvardhana	81
Vijñāpa	59	Visual	10
Vijñapti-mātra-siddhi	140	Viśuddha-simha	121, 130
		Viśvanātha	xvii



	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Vitanda	62	Word for the sake of others ..	106
Vītarāgastuti	51	Wordsworth, Mr. W. C. ..	xvi
Vivartavāda	129	Wordy	62
Vivṛti	13, 133	World	60, 129
Vow	5, 45	World-renowned	37
Vrata	5, 45		
Vṛddhavadī	14	X	
Vṛhadgaccha	50	Xylograph xv, 72, 100, 101, 108,	
Vṛhat-svayambhū-purāṇa ..	150	109, 121, 125	
Vyāghra-śiśuka	47	Y	
Vyāpaka	29, 111	Yajña	147
Vyāpakānupalabdhi	111	Yākinī	48
Vyāpakaviruddhopalabdhi ..	111	Yakṣa Pāla	149
Vyāpti .. 18, 20, 29, 42, 48, 92		Yamāri	xviii, 141
Vyāptigraha	55	Yaśodharma Deva	14
Vyāpya	29, 30, 31	Yaśovijaya 39, 50, 51, 52, 54, 131	
Vyatireka	32	133	
Vyatireki	31	Yaśovijaya Gaṇi	54
Vyavahāra	4, 11, 21	Yaśovijaya-granthamālā 6, 39, 52,	
Vyavahārābhāsa	43	53, 55	
Vyavahāra-sūtra	6	Yaśovijaya Pāṭhaśālā	55
Vyāvahārika	15	Yauga	54
		Yoga 10, 27, 33, 62, 65, 71, 73, 83	
W		Yogācāra xix, 51, 66, 67, 71, 72,	
Waddell, Col. 78, 124, 129, 151		74, 75, 78, 102, 122	
Wassilief	67, 105	Yogācārya	71
Wassiljew	68	Yogācārya-bhūmi-śāstra	83
War	62	Yogaśāstra	45
Water	22	Yogin	141
Watters, Mr. 63, 67, 68, 71, 72, 73,		Yuan Chwang 63, 67, 68, 71, 72,	
74, 75, 80, 146		73, 74, 75, 80, 146	
Weber, Dr. 3, 4, 5, 37, 50, 51, 53		Yuga-pradhāna	5
Weir Smyth	4	Yuga-pravara	5
Wenzel, Dr.	71	Yuka Ron	73
Wheel	100	Yukti-prayoga	139
Wheel of Reasons	99, 100	Yuktiśaṣṭikā kārīkā	70
White, Mr. Claude	xvi	Yuktyanuśāsana	23
Wijesinha .. 58, 61, 66, 67		Yul-lho-phyog	107
Williams, Monier	63		
Winding up	62	Z	
Word .. 85, 88, 89, 106, 111		Za-hor	99, 124
		Zaschuh	75
		Zla-wa-dge-baŋen	121